SERMONS
ON
SEVERAL OCCASIONS:
IN
FOUR VOLUMES.

By JOHN WESLEY, M. A.
Late Fellow of Lincoln College, Oxford.

VOL. IV.

THE FIFTH EDITION.

LONDON:
Printed for G. WHITFIELD, New-Chapel, City-Road; and sold at the Methodist Preaching-Houses in Town and Country.

1799.
SERMON XXX
OF ORIGINAL SIN

(first line of text)}
SERMON XLIX.

ON ORIGINAL SIN.

GENESIS VI. 5.

"And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually."

1. HOW widely different is this from the fair pictures of human nature, which men have drawn in all ages! The writings of many of the ancients abound with gay descriptions of the dignity of man: whom some of them paint as having all virtue and happiness in his composition, or at least, entirely in his power, without being beholden to any other being: yea, as self-sufficient, able to live on his own flock, and little inferior to God himself.

2. Nor have heathens alone, men who were guided in their researches by little more than the dim light of reason, but many likewise of them that bear the name of Christ, and to whom are entrusted the Oracles of God, spoke as magnificently concerning the nature of man, as if it were all innocence and perfection. Accounts of this kind have particularly abounded in the present century: and perhaps in no part of the world
more, than in our own country. Here not a few persons of strong understanding, as well as extensive learning, have employed their utmost abilities to shew, what they termed, "The fair side of human nature." And it must be acknowledged, that if their accounts of him be just, man is still but a little lower than the angels, or (as the words may be more literally rendered) a little less than God.

3. Is it any wonder, that these accounts are very readily received by the generality of men? For who is not easily persuaded to think favourably of himself? Accordingly writers of this kind are most universally read, admired, applauded. And innumerable are the converts they have made, not only in the gay, but the learned world. So that it is now quite unfashionable to talk otherwise, to say any thing to the disparagement of human nature: which is generally allowed, notwithstanding a few infirmities, to be very innocent and wise and virtuous.

4. But in the mean time, what must we do with our Bibles; for they will never agree with this. These accounts, however pleasing to flesh and blood, are utterly irreconcilable with the Scriptural. The Scripture avers, That "by one man's disobedience, all men were constituted sinners:" that "in Adam all died," spiritually died, lost the life and the image of God: that fallen, sinful Adam then "begat a son in his own likeness:" nor was it possible he should beget him in any other: for "who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean?" That consequently we as well as other men "were by nature, dead in trespasses and sins, without hope, without God in the world," and therefore "children
ON ORIGINAL SIN.

"children of wrath:" that every man may say, "I was shapen in wickedness, and in sin did my mother conceive me:" that "there is no difference, in that all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God:" of that glorious image of God, wherein man was originally created. And hence, when "the Lord looked down from heaven upon the children of men, he saw they were all gone out of the way, they were altogether become abominable, there was none righteous, no not one;" none that truly sought after God: just agreeable this, to what is declared by the Holy Ghost in the words above recited, "God saw," when he looked down from heaven before, "that the wickedness of man was great in the earth!" so great, that "every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually."

This is God's account of man: from which I shall take occasion, first, To shew what men were before the flood; secondly, To enquire, Whether they are not the same now? And thirdly, To add some inferences.

I. r. I am, first, by opening the words of the text to shew, What men were before the flood. And we may fully depend on the account here given. For God saw it, and he cannot be deceived. He "saw that the wickedness of man was great." Not of this or that man; not of a few men only: not barely of the greater part, but of man in general, of men universally. The word includes the whole human race, every partaker of human nature. And it is not easy for us to compute their numbers, to tell how many thousands and millions they were. The earth then retained much of its primeval beauty and
and original fruitfulness. The face of the globe was not rent and torn, as it is now: and spring and summer went hand in hand. It is therefore probable, it afforded sustenance for far more inhabitants, than it is now capable of sustaining; and these must be immensely multiplied, while men begat sons and daughters for seven or eight hundred years together. Yet among all this inconceivable number, only Noah found favour with God. He alone (perhaps including part of his household) was an exception from the universal wickedness which by the just judgment of God, in a short time after brought on universal destruction. All the rest were partakers in the same guilt, as they were in the same punishment.

2. "God saw all the imaginations of the thoughts of his heart;" Of his soul, his inward man, the spirit within him, the principle of all his inward and outward motions. He saw all the imagination. It is not possible to find a word of a more extensive signification. It includes whatever is formed, made, fabricated within; all that is, or passes in the soul, every inclination, affection, passion, appetite; every temper, design, thought. It must of consequence include every word and action, as naturally flowing from these fountains: and being either good or evil, according to the fountain from which they severally flow.

3. Now God saw that all this, the whole thereof was evil, contrary to moral rectitude; contrary to the nature of God, which necessarily includes all good; contrary to the divine will, the eternal standard of good and evil: contrary to the pure, holy image of God, wherein man was originally created, and wherein he stood when
ON ORIGINAL SIN.

when God surveying the works of his hands, saw them all to be very good; contrary to justice, mercy and truth, and to the essential relations which each man bore to his Creator and his fellow creatures.

4. But was there not good mingled with the evil? Was there not light intermixt with the darkness? No, none at all: God saw that the whole imagination of the heart of man was only evil. It cannot indeed be denied, but many of them, perhaps all, had good motions put into their hearts. For the Spirit of God did then also "strive with man," if haply he might repent: more especially during that gracious reprieve, the hundred and twenty years, while the ark was preparing. But still "in his flesh dwelt no good thing." all his nature was purely evil. It was wholly consistent with itself, and unmixt with any thing of an opposite nature.

5. However it may still be matter of enquiry, "Was there no intermission of this evil? Were there no lucid intervals, wherein something good might be found in the heart of man?" We are not here to consider, what the grace of God might occasionally work in his soul. And abstracted from this, we have no reason to believe, there was any intermission of that evil. For God who "saw the whole imagination of the thoughts of his heart to be only evil," saw likewise, that it was always the same, that it "was only evil continually:" every year, every day, every hour, every moment. He never deviated into good.

II. Such is the authentic account of the whole race of mankind, which he who knoweth what
is in man, who searcheth the heart and trieth
the reins hath left upon record for our instruc-
tion. Such were all men before God brought
the flood upon the earth. We are, secondly, to
enquire, Whether they are the same now?

1. And this is certain, The Scriptures give us
no reason, to think any otherwise of them. On
the contrary, all the above-cited passages of
scripture, refer to those who lived after the flood.
It was above a thousand years after, that God
declared by David concerning the children of
men, " They are all gone out of the way" of
truth and holiness, " there is none righteous, no
not one." And to this bear all the prophets wit-
ness, in their several generations. So Isaiah,
concerning God's peculiar people, (and certainly
the Heathens were in no better condition) " The
whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint.
From the sole of the foot, even unto the head,
there is no soundness, but wounds and bruises
and putrifying sores." The same account is
given by all the Apostles, yea, by the whole
tenor of the Oracles of God. From all these
we learn, concerning man in his natural state,
unassisted by the grace of God, that all the ima-
ginations of the thoughts of his heart are still evil,
only evil, and that continually.

2. And this account of the present state of
man, is confirmed by daily experience. It is
true, the natural man discerns it not: and this
is not to be wondered at. So long as a man
born blind, continues so, he is scarce sensible of
his want. Much less, could we suppose a place
where all were born without sight, would they
be sensible of the want of it. In like manner, so
long as men remain in their natural blindness of
understanding, they are not sensible of their spiritual wants, and of this in particular. But as soon as God opens the eyes of their understanding, they see the state they were in before; they are then deeply convinced, That every man living, themselves especially, are by nature altogether vanity, that is, folly and ignorance, sin and wickedness.

3. We see, when God opens our eyes, that we were before \( \pi \varepsilon \tau \iota \zeta \varepsilon \nu \varepsilon \tau \overline{o} \zeta \varepsilon \iota \nu \) without God, or rather, Atheists in the world. We had by nature no knowledge of God, no acquaintance. It is true, as soon as we came to the use of reason, we learned “the invisible things of God, even his eternal power and Godhead, from the things that are made.” From the things that are seen, we inferred the existence of an eternal, powerful Being, that is not seen. But still, although we acknowledge we had no acquaintance with him. As we know there is an Emperor of China, whom yet we do not know; so we knew, there was a King of all the earth; yet we knew him not. Indeed we could not, by any of our natural faculties. By none of these could we attain the knowledge of God. We could no more perceive him by our natural understanding, than we could see him with our eyes. For “no one knoweth the Father but the Son, and he to whom the Son willeth to reveal him. And no one knoweth the Son but the Father, and he to whom the Father revealeth him.”

4. We read of an ancient King, who being desirous to know what was the natural language of men, in order to bring the matter to a certain issue, made the following experiment. He ordered two infants as soon as they were born, to be
be conveyed to a place prepared for them, where they were brought up without any instruction at all, and without ever hearing an human voice. And what was the event? Why, That when they were at length brought out of their confinement, they spake no language at all, they uttered only inarticulate sounds, like those of other animals. Were two infants in like manner to be brought up from the womb, without being instructed in any religion, there is little room to doubt, but (unless the grace of God interposed) the event would be just the same. They would have no religion at all: they would have no more knowledge of God, than the beasts of the field, than the wild ass's colt. Such is natural religion! Abstracted from traditional, and from the influences of God's Spirit.

5. And having no knowledge, we can have no love of God: we cannot love him we know not. Most men talk indeed of loving God, and perhaps imagine they do. At least, few will acknowledge they do not love him: but the fact is too plain to be denied. No man loves God by nature, no more than does a stone or the earth he treads upon. What we love, we delight in: but no man has naturally any delight in God. In our natural state, we cannot conceive, how any one should delight in him. We take no pleasure in him at all; he is utterly tasteless to us. To love God! It is far above, out of our sight. We cannot, naturally, attain unto it.

6. We have by nature not only no love, but no fear of God. It is allowed indeed, that most men have, sooner or later, a kind of senseless, irrational fear, properly called Superstition, though the blundering Epicureans gave it the name
name of Religion. Yet even this is not natural, but acquired: chiefly by conversation or from example. By nature, God is not in all our thoughts: we leave him to manage his own affairs, to sit quietly, as we imagine, in heaven, and leave us on earth to manage ours. So that we have no more of the fear of God before our eyes, than of the love of God in our hearts.

7. Thus are all men Atheists in the world. But atheism itself does not screen us from idolatry. In his natural state, every man born into the world is a rank Idolater. Perhaps indeed we may not be such in the vulgar sense of the word. We do not, like the idolatrous Heathens, worship molten or graven images. We do not bow down to the stock of a tree, to the work of our own hands. We do not pray to the angels or saints in heaven, any more than to the saints that are upon earth. But what then? We have set up our idols in our hearts; and to these we bow down and worship them: we worship ourselves, when we pay that honour to ourselves which is due to God only. Therefore all pride is idolatry: it is ascribing to ourselves what is due to God alone. And although pride was not made for man, yet where is the man that is born without it? But hereby we rob God of his unalienable right, and idolatrously usurp his glory.

8. But pride is not the only sort of idolatry, which we are all by nature guilty of. Satan has stamped his own image on our heart in Self-will also. I will, said he before he was cast out of heaven, I will sit upon the sides of the North. I will do my own will and pleasure, independantly on that of my Creator. The same does every
SERMON XLIX.

every man born into the world say, and that in a thousand instances. Nay, and avow it too, without ever blushing upon the account, without either fear or shame. Ask the man, "Why did you do this?" He answers, "Because I had a mind to it." What is this but, "Because it was my will;" that is in effect, because the devil and I are agreed: because Satan and I govern our actions, by one and the same principle. The will of God mean time is not in his thoughts, is not considered in the least degree: although it be the supreme rule of every intelligent creature, whether in heaven or earth, resulting from the essential, unalterable relation, which all creatures bear to their Creator.

9. So far we bear the image of the devil, and tread in his steps. But at the next step we leave Satan behind, we run into an idolatry whereof he is not guilty: I mean, Love of the world, which is now as natural to every man, as to love his own will. What is more natural to us, than to seek happiness in the creature, instead of the Creator? To seek that satisfaction in the works of his hands, which can be found in God only? What more natural than the desire of the flesh? That is, of the pleasure of sense in every kind? Men indeed talk magnificently of despising these low pleasures, particularly men of learning and education. They affect to sit loose to the gratification of those appetites, wherein they stand on a level with the beasts that perish. But it is mere affectation; for every man is conscious to himself, that in this respect he is by nature a very beast. Sensual appetites, even those of the lowest kind, have, more or less, the dominion over him. They lead him captive,
they drag him to and fro, in spite of his boasted reason. The man, with all his good-breeding and other accomplishments, has no pre-eminence over the goat: nay, it is much to be doubted, whether the beast has not the pre-eminence over him? Certainly he has, if we may hearken to one of their modern oracles, who very decently tells us,

"Once in a season, beasts too taste of love;
Only the beast of reason is its slave,
And in that folly drudges all the year."

A considerable difference indeed, it must be allowed, there is between man and man, arising (beside that wrought by preventing grace) from difference of constitution, and of education. But notwithstanding this, who, that is not utterly ignorant of himself, can here cast the first stone at another? Who can abide the test of our blessed Lord's comment on the seventh commandment? "He that looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart?" So that one knows not which to wonder at most, the ignorance or the insolence of those men, who speak with such disdain of them that are overcome by desires, which every man has felt in his own breast! The desire of every pleasure of sense, innocent or not, being natural to every child of man.

10. And so is the desire of the eye, the desire of the pleasures of the imagination. These arise either from great, or beautiful, or uncommon objects: if the two former do not coincide with the latter; for perhaps it would appear upon a diligent enquiry, That neither grand nor beautiful objects please, any longer than they are new.
that when the novelty of them is over, the greatest part, at least, of the pleasures they give is over; and in the same proportion as they become familiar, they become flat and insipid. But let us experience this ever so often, the same desire will remain still. The inbred thirst continues fixed in the soul; nay the more it is indulged, the more it increases, and incites us to follow after another, and yet another object; although we leave every one with an abortive hope, and a deluded expectation. Yea

"The hoary fool, who many days
   Has struggled with continued sorrow,
   Renews his hope, and fondly lays
   The desperate bet upon to-morrow!

"To-morrow comes! 'Tis noon! 'Tis night!
   This day like all the former flies:
   Yet on he goes, to seek delight
   To-morrow, till to-night he dies!"

II. A third symptom of this fatal disease the love of the world, which is so deeply rooted in our nature, is the pride of life, the desire of praise, of the honour that cometh of men. This the greatest admirers of human nature allow to be strictly natural: as natural as the sight or hearing, or any other of the external senses. And are they ashamed of it, even men of letters, men of refined and improved understanding? So far from it, that they glory therein! they applaud themselves for their love of applause! Yea, eminent Christians, so called, make no difficulty of adopting the saying of the old, vain Heathen, Animi dissoluti est & nequam neglegere quid de se homines sentiant: "Not to regard what men
men think of us, is the mark of a wicked and abandoned mind." So that to go calm and unmoved through honour and dishonour, through evil report and good report, is with them a sign of one that is indeed not fit to live; away with such a fellow from the earth. But would one imagine that these men had ever heard of Jesus Christ or his Apostles? Or that they knew who it was that said, "How can ye believe, who receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour which cometh of God only?" But if this be really so, if it be impossible to believe, and consequently to please God, so long as we receive or seek honour one of another, and seek not the honour which cometh of God only: then in what a condition are all mankind! The Christians as well as Heathens! Since they all seek honour one of another! Since it is as natural for them so to do, themselves being the judges, as it is to see the light which strikes upon their eye, or to hear the sound which enters their ear: yea, since they account it the sign of a virtuous mind, to seek the praise of men; and of a vicious one, to be content with the honour that cometh of God only!

III. 1. I proceed to draw a few inferences from what has been said. And first, From hence we may learn one grand, fundamental difference between Christianity, considered as a system of doctrines, and the most refined heathenism. Many of the antient Heathens have largely described the vices of particular men. They have spoken much against their covetousness or cruelty, their luxury or prodigality. Some have dared to say, That "no man is born, without vices of one kind or another." But still, as none
of them were apprised of the fall of man, so none of them knew his total corruption. They knew not, that all men were empty of all good, and filled with all manner of evil. They were wholly ignorant of the entire depravation of the whole human nature, of every man born in the world, in every faculty of his soul, not so much by those particular vices, which reign in particular persons, as by the general flood of atheism and idolatry, of pride, self-will and love of the world. This therefore is the first, grand, distinguishing point between Heathenism and Christianity. The one acknowledges, that many men are infected with many vices, and even born with a proneness to them; but supposes withal, that in some the natural good much overbalances the evil. The other declares, That all men are conceived in sin, and shapen in wickedness: that hence there is in every man a carnal mind, which is enmity against God, which is not, cannot be subject to his law, and which so infects the whole soul, that there dwelleth in him, in his flesh, in his natural state, no good thing; but all the imagination of the thoughts of his heart, is evil, only evil, and that continually.

2. Hence we may, secondly, learn, That all who deny this, call it Original Sin, or by any other title, are but Heathens still, in the fundamental point which differences Heathenism from Christianity. They may indeed allow, That men have many vices: that some are born with us: and that consequently we are not born altogether so wise or so virtuous, as we should be: there being few that will roundly affirm, "We are born with as much propensity to good as to evil, and that every man is by nature as virtuous and
and wife, as Adam was at his creation." But here is the shibboleth: Is man by nature filled with all manner of evil? Is he void of all good? Is he wholly fallen? Is his soul totally corrupted? Or, to come back to the text, Is every imagination of the thoughts of his heart evil continually? Allow this and you are so far a Christian. Deny it, and you are but an Heathen still.

3. We may learn from hence, in the third place, What is the proper nature of Religion, of the Religion of Jesus Christ. It is Θεοτοκε Παγισ. God's method of healing a soul which is thus diseased. Hereby the great Physician of souls applies medicines to heal this sickness; to restore human nature, totally corrupted in all its faculties. God heals our atheism, by the knowledge of himself, and of Jesus Christ whom he hath sent; by giving us faith, a divine evidence and conviction of God and of the things of God: in particular, of this important truth, Christ loved me, and gave himself for me.

By repentance and lowliness of heart, the deadly disease of pride is healed: that of self-will by resignation, a meek and thankful submission to the will of God. And for the love of the world in all its branches, the love of God is the sovereign remedy. Now this is properly Religion, faith thus working by love, working the genuine meek humility, entire deadness to the world, with a loving, thankful acquiescence in and conformity to the whole will and word of God.

4. Indeed if man were not thus fallen, there would be no need of all this. There would be no occasion for this work in the heart, this renewal in the spirit of our mind. The superfluity of godliness, would then be a more proper expression.
tion than the superfluity of naughtiness. For an outside religion without any godliness at all, would suffice to all rational intents and purposes. It does accordingly suffice, in the judgment of those who deny this corruption of our nature. They make very little more of Religion, than the famous Mr. Hobbes did of reason. According to him, Reason is only, "A well-ordered train of words:" according to them, Religion is only a well-ordered train of words and actions. And they speak consistently with themselves: for if the inside be not full of wickedness, if this be clean already, what remains, but to cleanse the outside of the cup? Outward reformation, if their supposition be just, is indeed the one thing needful.

5. But ye have not so learned the Oracles of God. Ye know, that he who seeth what is in man, gives a far different account both of nature and grace, of our fall and our recovery. Ye know that the great end of Religion is, To renew our hearts in the image of God, to repair that total loss of righteousness and true holiness, which we sustained by the sin of our first parent. Ye know that all religion which does not answer this end, all that stops short of this, The renewal of our soul in the image of God, after the likeness of him that created it, is no other than a poor farce, and a mere mockery of God, to the destruction of our own soul. O beware of all those teachers of lies, who would palm this upon you for Christianity! Regard them not, although they should come unto you with all the deceivableness of unrighteousness, with all smoothness of language, all decency, yea beauty and elegance of expression, all professions of earnest.
earnest good-will to you, and reverence for the Holy Scriptures. Keep to the plain, old faith, once delivered to the saints, and delivered by the Spirit of God to our hearts. Know your disease! Know your cure! Ye were born in sin: therefore ye must be born again, born of God. By nature ye are wholly corrupted: by grace ye shall be wholly renewed. In Adam ye all died: in the second Adam, in Christ ye all are made alive. You that were dead in sins hath he quickened: he hath already given you a principle of life, even faith in him who loved you, and gave himself for you! Now go on from faith to faith, until your whole sickness be healed, and all that mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus!
SERMON L.

ON THE NEW BIRTH.

JOHN III. 7.

"Ye must be born again."

1. If any doctrine within the whole compass of christianity may be properly termed fundamental, they are doubtless these two, the doctrine of Justification, and that of the New Birth: the former relating to that great work, which God does for us, in forgiving our sins; the latter, to the great work, which God does in us, in renewing our fallen nature. In order of time, neither of these is before the other: in the moment we are justified by the grace of God, through the redemption that is in Jesus, we are also born of the Spirit; but in order of thinking, as it is termed, Justification precedes the New Birth. We first conceive his wrath to be turned away, and then his Spirit to work in our hearts.

2. How great importance then must it be of to every child of man, thoroughly to understand these fundamental doctrines? From a full conviction of this, many excellent men have wrote very largely concerning Justification, explaining every point relating thereto, and opening the scriptures
The New Birth.

27

Scriptures which treat upon it. Many likewise have wrote on the New Birth: and some of them largely enough: but yet not so clearly as might have been desired: nor so deeply, and accurately: having either given a dark, abstruse account of it, or a slight and superficial one. Therefore a full, and at the same time, a clear account of the New Birth seems to be wanting still: such as may enable us to give a satisfactory answer to these three questions. First, Why must we be born again? What is the foundation of this doctrine of the New Birth? Secondly, How must we be born again? What is the nature of the New Birth? And Thirdly, Wherefore must we be born again? To what end is it necessary? These questions, by the assistance of God, I shall briefly and plainly answer, and then subjoin a few inferences which will naturally follow.

I. 1. And first, Why must we be born again? What is the foundation of this doctrine? The foundation of it lies near as deep as the creation of the world: in the scriptural account whereof we read, *Gen. i. 26, 27.* according

*And God," the three-one God, said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him: not barely in his natural image, a picture of his own immortality, a spiritual being, endued with understanding, freedom of will, and various affections: nor merely in his political image, the governor of this lower world, having "dominion over the fishes of the sea, and over all the earth:" but chiefly in his moral image, which

* Gen. i. 26, 27.
according to the Apostle, is * "righteousness and true holiness." In this image of God was man made. \( \text{God is love;} \) accordingly man at his creation was full of love: which was the sole principle of all his tempers, thoughts, words and actions. God is full of justice, mercy and truth: so was man as he came from the hands of his Creator. God is spotless purity: and so man was in the beginning pure from every sinful blot. Otherwise God could not have pronounced him, as well as all the other works of his hands, \( \text{† "very good." } \) This he could not have been, had he not been pure from sin, and filled with righteousness and true holiness. For there is no medium: if we suppose an intelligent creature, not to love God, not to be righteous and holy, we necessarily suppose him not to be good at all: much less to be \text{very good.}

2. But although man was made in the image of God, yet he was not made immutable. This would have been inconsistent with that state of trial, in which God was pleased to place him. He was therefore created able to stand, and yet liable to fall. And this God himself apprized him of, and gave him a solemn warning against it. Nevertheless \text{man did not abide in honour;} he fell from his high estate. He "ate of the tree whereof the Lord had commanded him, Thou shalt not eat thereof." By this wilful act of disobedience to his Creator, this flat rebellion against his Sovereign, he openly declared, that he would no longer have God to rule over him: that he would be governed by his own will, and not the will of him that created him, and that he would not seek his happiness in God, but in

* Eph. iv. 24.  
† Gen. i. 31.
the world, in the works of his hands. Now God had told him before, "In the day that thou eatest of that fruit thou shalt surely die." And the word of the Lord cannot be broken. Accordingly in that day he did die: he died to God, the most dreadful of all deaths. He lost the life of God: he was separated from him, in union with whom his spiritual life consisted. The body dies, when it is separated from the soul; the soul when it is separated from God. But this separation from God, Adam sustained in the day, the hour he ate of the forbidden fruit. And of this he gave immediate proof; presently shewing by his behaviour, that the love of God was extinguished in his soul, which was now alienated from the life of God. Instead of this, he was now under the power of servile fear, so that he fled from the presence of the Lord. Yea, so little did he retain even of the knowledge of him, who filleth heaven and earth, that he endeavoured to *hide himself from the Lord God, among the trees of the garden. So had he lost both the knowledge and the love of God, without which the image of God could not subsist. Of this therefore he was deprived at the same time, and became unholy as well as unhappy. In the room of this, he had sunk into pride and self-will, the very image of the devil, and into sensual appetites and desires, the image of the beasts that perish.

3. If it be said, "Nay but that threatening, "In the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die," refers to temporal death and that alone, to the death of the body only;" the answer is plain; to affirm this, is flatly and pal-

* Gen. iii. 8. pably
pably to make God a liar; to aver that the God of truth positively affirmed a thing contrary to truth. For it is evident, Adam did not die in this sense, in the day that he ate thereof. He lived in the sense opposite to this death, above nine hundred years after. So that this cannot possibly be understood of the death of the body, without impeaching the veracity of God. It must therefore be understood of spiritual death, the loss of the life and image of God.

4. And in Adam all died, all human-kind, all the children of men who were then in Adam’s loins. The natural consequence of this is, that every one descended from him, comes into the world spiritually dead, dead to God, wholly dead in sin: entirely void of the life of God, void of the image of God, of all that righteousness and holiness, wherein Adam was created. Instead of this, every man born into the world, now bears the image of the devil, in pride and self-will; the image of the beast, in sensual appetites and desires. This then is the foundation of the New Birth, the entire corruption of our nature. Hence it is, that being born in sin, we must be born again. Hence every one that is born of a woman, must be born of the Spirit of God.

11. 1. But how must a man be born again? What is the nature of the New Birth? This is the second question. And a question it is, of the highest moment that can be conceived. We ought not therefore in so weighty a concern, to be content with a slight enquiry; but to examine it with all possible care, and to ponder it in our hearts, till we fully understand this important
portant point, and clearly see, how we are to be born again.

2. Not that we are to expect any minute, philosophical account of the manner how this is done. Our Lord sufficiently guards us against any such expectation, by the words immediately following the text: wherein he reminds Nicodemus of as indisputable a fact, as any in the whole compass of nature: which notwithstanding the wisest man under the sun is not able fully to explain. "The wind bloweth where it listeth," not by thy power or wisdom, "and thou hearest the sound thereof:" thou art absolutely assured beyond all doubt, that it doth blow. "But thou canst not tell whence it cometh, nor whither it goeth." The precise manner how it begins and ends, rises and falls, no man can tell. "So is every one that is born of the Spirit. Thou mayest be as absolutely assured of the fact, as of the blowing of the wind: but the precise manner how it is done, how the Holy Spirit works this in the soul, neither thou, nor the wisest of the children of men, are able to explain.

3. However it suffices for every rational and christian purpose, that without descends into curious, critical enquiries, we can give a plain scriptural account of the nature of the New Birth. This will satisfy every reasonable man, who desires only the salvation of his soul. The expression, being born again, was not first used by our Lord in his conversation with Nicodemus. It was well known before that time, and was in common use among the Jews, when our Saviour appeared among them. When an adult heathen was convinced, that the Jewish religion...
was of God, and desired to join therein, it was the custom to baptize him first, before he was admitted to circumcision. And when he was baptized, he was said to be born again: by which they meant, that he who was before a child of the devil, was now adopted into the family of God, and accounted one of his children. This expression therefore which Nicodemus, being a teacher in Israel, ought to have understood well, our Lord uses in conversing with him: only in a stronger sense than he was accustomed to. And this might be the reason of his asking, "How can these things be?" They cannot be literally. A man cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb, and be born. But they may, spiritually. A man may be born from above, born of God, born of the Spirit: in a manner which bears a very near analogy to the natural birth.

4. Before a child is born into the world, he has eyes, but sees not; he has ears, but does not hear. He has a very imperfect use of every other sense. He has no knowledge of any of the things of the world, or any natural understanding. To that manner of existence which he then has, we do not even give the name of life. It is then only when a man is born, that we say, He begins to live. For as soon as he is born, he begins to see the light, and the various objects with which he is encompassed. His ears are then opened, and he hears the sounds which successively strike upon them. At the same time all the other organs of sense begin to be exercised upon their proper objects. He likewise breathes and lives in a manner wholly different from what he did before. How exactly
THE NEW BIRTH.

Daily doth the parallel hold, in all these instances? While a man is in a mere natural state, before he is born of God, he has, in a spiritual sense, eyes and sees not; a thick impenetrable veil lies upon them. He has ears, but hears not; he is utterly deaf to what he is most of all concerned to hear. His other spiritual senses are all locked up: he is in the same condition as if he had them not. Hence he has no knowledge of God, no intercourse with him; he is not at all acquainted with him. He has no true knowledge of the things of God, either of spiritual or eternal things. Therefore though he is a living man, he is a dead Christian. But as soon as he is born of God, there is a total change in all these particulars. The eyes of his understanding are opened (such is the language of the great Apostle:) and he, who of old commanded light to shine out of darkness, shining on his heart, he sees the light of the glory of God, his glorious love, in the face of Jesus Christ. His ears being opened, he is now capable of hearing the inward voice of God, saying, "Be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee: go and sin no more." This is the purport of what God speaks to his heart; although perhaps not in these very words. He is now ready to hear whatsoever he that teacheth man knowledge, is pleased from time to time to reveal to him. He "feels in his heart (to use the language of our Church) the mighty working of the Spirit of God:" not in a gross, carnal sense, as the men of the world stupidly and wilfully misunderstand the expression: though they have been told again and again, we mean thereby neither more nor less than this: he feels,—is inwardly sensible of the
graces, which the Spirit of God works in his heart. He feels, he is conscious of a "peace which passeth all understanding." He many times feels such a joy in God, as is "unspeakable and full of glory." He feels the "love of God shed abroad in his heart by the Holy Ghost which is given unto him." And all his spiritual senses are then exercised to discern spiritual good and evil. By the use of these he is daily encreasing in the knowledge of God, of Jesus Christ whom he hath sent, and of all the things pertaining to his inward kingdom. And now he may be properly said to live: God having quickened him by his Spirit, he is alive to God through Jesus Christ. He lives a life which the world knoweth not of, a life which is hid with Christ in God: God is continually breathing, as it were, upon the soul, and his soul is breathing unto God. Grace is descending into his heart, and prayer and praise ascending to heaven. And by his intercourse between God and man, this fellowship with the Father and the Son, as by a kind of spiritual respiration, the life of God in the soul is sustained: and the child of God grows up, till he comes to the "full measure of the stature of Christ."

5. From hence it manifestly appears, what is the nature of the New Birth. It is that great change which God works in the soul, when he brings it into life; when he raises it from the death of sin, to the life of righteousness. It is the change wrought in the whole soul by the Almighty Spirit of God, when it is created anew in Christ Jesus, when it is "renewed after the image of God, in righteousness and true holiness;" when the love of the world is changed into
into the love of God, pride into humility, passion into meekness; hatred, envy, malice, into a sincere, tender, disinterested love for all mankind. In a word, it is that change whereby the earthly, sensual, devilish mind, is turned into the mind which was in Christ Jesus. This is the nature of the New Birth. So is everyone that is born of the Spirit.

III. 1. It is not difficult for any who has considered these things, to see the necessity of the New Birth, and to answer the third question, Wherefore, to what end is it necessary that we should be born again? It is very easily discerned, that this is necessary, first, in order to holiness. For what is holiness, according to the Oracles of God? Not a bare external religion, a round of outward duties, how many soever they be, and how exactly soever performed. No: gospel-holiness is no less than the image of God stamped upon the heart. It is no other than the whole mind which was in Christ Jesus. It consists of all heavenly affections and tempers mingled together in one. It implies such a continual, thankful love, to him who hath not withheld from us his son, his only son, as makes it natural, and in a manner necessary to us, to love every child of man; as fills us with bowels of mercies, kindness, gentleness, long-suffering. It is such a love of God as teaches us to be blameless in all manner of conversation; as enables us to present our souls and bodies, all we are, and all we have, all our thoughts, words, and actions, a continual sacrifice to God, acceptable through Christ Jesus. Now this holiness can have no existence, till we are renewed in the image of our mind. It can-
not commence in the soul, till that change be wrought, till by the power of the Highest overshadowing us, we are “brought from darkness to light, from the power of Satan unto God;” that is, till we are born again; which therefore is absolutely necessary in order to holiness.

2. But without holiness no man shall see the Lord, shall see the face of God in glory. Of consequence, the New Birth is absolutely necessary, in order to eternal salvation. Men may indeed flatter themselves (so desperately wicked and so deceitful is the heart of man!) that they may live in their sins till they come to the last gasp, and yet afterwards live with God. And thousands do really believe, that they have found a broad way which leadeth not to destruction. What danger, say they, can a woman be in that is so harmless and so virtuous? What fear is there that so honest a man, one of so strict morality, should miss of heaven? Especially, if over and above all this, they constantly attend on church and sacrament. One of these will ask with all assurance, “What, shall I not do as well as my neighbours?” Yes, as well as your unholy neighbours: as well as your neighbours that die in their sins. For you will all drop into the pit together, into the nethermost hell! You will all lie together in the lake of fire, “the lake of fire burning with brimstone.” Then, at length you will see (but God grant you may see it before!) the necessity of holiness in order to glory: and consequently of the New Birth, since none can be holy, except he be born again.

3. For
3. For the same reason, except he be born again, none can be happy even in this world. For it is not possible, in the nature of things, that a man should be happy, who is not holy. Even the poor, ungodly poet could tell us, *Nemo malus felix*: No wicked man is happy. The reason is plain: All unholy tempers are uneasy tempers. Not only malice, hatred, envy, jealousy, revenge, create a present hell in the breast, but even the softer passions, if not kept within due bounds, give a thousand times more pain than pleasure. Even hope, when deferred (and how often must this be the case?) maketh the heart sick. And every desire which is not according to the will of God, is liable to pierce us through with many sorrows. And all those general sources of sin, pride, self-will and idolatry, are in the same proportion as they prevail, general sources of misery. Therefore as long as these reign in any soul, happiness has no place there. But they must reign, till the bent of our nature is changed; that is, till we are born again. Consequently, the New Birth is absolutely necessary in order to happiness in this world, as well as in the world to come.

IV. I proposed in the last place, to subjoin a few inferences, which naturally follow from the preceding observations.

1. And, first, It follows, that baptism is not the New Birth: they are not one and the same thing. Many indeed seem to imagine, they are just the same: at least, they speak as if they thought so: but I do not know that this opinion is publicly avowed, by any denomination of Christians
Christians whatever. Certainly it is not, by any within these kingdoms, whether of the established Church, or dissenting from it. The judgment of the latter is clearly declared, in their * large Catechism: Q. "What are the parts of a sacrament? A. The parts of a sacrament are two: the one, an outward and sensible sign; the other an inward and spiritual grace thereby signified. Q. What is baptism? Baptism is a sacrament, wherein Christ hath ordained the washing with water, to be a sign and seal of regeneration by his Spirit." Here it is manifest, baptism the sign, is spoken of as distinct from regeneration, the thing signified.

In the Church-Catechism likewise, the judgment of our Church is declared with the utmost clearness. "What meanest thou by this word, sacrament? I mean an outward and visible sign of an inward and spiritual grace. What is the outward part, or form in baptism? Water, wherein the person is baptized, in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. What is the inward part, or thing signified? A death unto sin, and a new birth unto righteousness." Nothing therefore is plainer, than that, according to the Church of England, baptism is not the New Birth.

But indeed the reason of the thing is so clear and evident, as not to need any other authority. For what can be more plain, than that the one is an external, the other an internal work? That the one is a visible, the other an invisible thing, and therefore wholly different from each other:

* Q. 163. 165.
THE NEW BIRTH.

the one being an act of man, purifying the body: the other a change wrought by God in the soul. So that the former is just as distinguishable from the latter, as the soul from the body, or water from the Holy Ghost.

2. From the preceding reflections, we may, secondly observe, That as the New Birth is not the same thing with baptism, so it does not always accompany baptism: they do not constantly go together. A man may possibly be born of water, and yet not be born of the Spirit. There may sometimes be the outward sign, where there is not the inward grace. I do not now speak with regard to infants: it is certain, our Church supposes, that all, who are baptized in their infancy, are at the same time born again. And it is allowed, that the whole office for the baptism of infants proceeds upon this supposition. Nor is it an objection of any weight against this, that we cannot comprehend, how this work can be wrought in infants? For neither can we comprehend, how it is wrought in a person of riper years. But whatever be the case with infants, it is sure all of riper years, who are baptized, are not at the same time born again. "The tree is known by its fruits:" and hereby it appears too plain to be denied, that divers of those, who were children of the devil before they were baptized, continue the same after baptism; "for the works of their father they do;" they continue servants of sin, without any pretence either to inward or outward holiness.

3. A third inference which we may draw from what has been observed is, That the New Birth.
Birth is not the same with Sanctification. This is indeed taken for granted by many; particularly by an eminent Writer, in his late treatise on "The nature and grounds of Christian Regeneration." To wave several other weighty objections, which might be made to that tract, this is a palpable one: it all along speaks of regeneration as a progressive work, carried on in the soul by slow degrees, from the time of our first turning to God. This is undeniably true of Sanctification; but of Regeneration, the New Birth, it is not true. This is a part of Sanctification, not the whole; it is the gate of it, the entrance into it. When we are born again, then our Sanctification, our inward and outward holiness begins. And thence forward we are gradually to "grow up in him, who is our head." This expression of the Apostle admirably illustrates the difference between one and the other, and farther points out the exact analogy there is between natural and spiritual things. A child is born of a woman in a moment, or at least in a very short time. Afterward he gradually and slowly grows, till he attains to the stature of a man. In like manner, a person is born of God in a short time, if not in a moment. But it is by slow degrees that he afterward grows up to the measure of the full stature of Christ. The same relation therefore, which there is between our natural birth and our growth, there is also between our New Birth and our Sanctification.

4. One point more we may learn from the preceding observations. But it is a point of so great importance, as may excuse the considering it.
THE NEW BIRTH.

at the more carefully, and prosecuting it at some length. What must one who loves the souls of men, and is grieved that any of them should perish, say to one whom he sees living in Sabbath-breaking, drunkenness, or any other wilful sin? What can he say, if the foregoing observations are true, but, You must be born again.

"No, says a zealous man, that cannot be. How can you talk so uncharitably to the man? Has he not been baptized already? He cannot be born again now." Can he not be born again? Do you affirm this? Then he cannot be saved. Though he be as old as Nicodemus was, yet "except he be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God." Therefore in saying, "he cannot be born again," you in effect deliver him over to damnation. And where lies the uncharitableness now? On my side, or on yours? I say, he may be born again, and so become an heir of salvation. You say, "he cannot be born again." And if so, he must inevitably perish. So you utterly block up his way to salvation, and send him to hell, out of mere charity!

But perhaps the sinner himself, to whom in real charity we say, "You must be born again," has been taught to say, "I defy your new doctrine; I need not be born again. I was born again when I was baptized. What! Would you have me deny my baptism?" I answer, first, there is nothing under heaven which can excuse a lie. Otherwise I should say to an open sinner, if you have been baptized, do not own it. For how highly does this aggravate your guilt? How will it increase your damnation? Was
SERMON L.

Was you devoted to God at eight days old, and have you been all these years devoting yourself to the devil? Was you, even before you had the use of reason, consecrated to God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost? And have you, ever since you had the use of it, been flying in the face of God, and consecrating yourself to Satan? Does the abomination of desolation, the love of the world, pride, anger, lust, foolish desire, and a whole train of vile affections, stand where it ought not? Have you set up all these accursed things in that soul, which was once "a temple of the Holy Ghost?" Set apart for "an habitation of God through the Spirit?" Yea, solemnly given up to him? And do you glory in this, that you once belonged to God? O be ashamed! Blush! Hide yourself in the earth! Never boast more of what ought to fill you with confusion, to make you ashamed before God and man! I answer, secondly, You have already denied your baptism; and that in the most effectual manner. You have denied it a thousand and a thousand times; and you do so still, day by day. For in your baptism you renounced the devil and all his works. Whenever therefore you give place to him again, whenever you do any of the works of the devil, then you deny your baptism. Therefore you deny it by every wilful sin: by every act of uncleanness, drunkenness, or revenge; by every obscene or profane word; by every oath that comes out of your mouth. Every time you profane the day of the Lord, you thereby deny your baptism: Yea, every time you do anything to another, which you would not he should
THE NEW BIRTH.

Should do to you. I answer, thirdly, Be you baptized or unbaptized, you must be born again. Otherwise it is not possible you should be inwardly holy: and without inward as well as outward holiness, you cannot be happy even in this world; much less in the world to come.

Do you say, "Nay, but I do no harm to any man; I am honest and just in all my dealings; I do not curse, or take the Lord's name in vain; I do not profane the Lord's day; I am no drunkard; I do not slander my neighbour, nor live in any wilful sin." If this be so, it were much to be wished that all men went as far as you do. But you must go farther yet, or you cannot be saved: still, you must be born again. Do you add, "I do go farther yet; for I not only do no harm, but do all the good I can;" I doubt that fact; I fear you have had a thousand opportunities of doing good, which you have suffered to pass by unimproved, and for which therefore you are accountable to God. But if you had improved them all, if you really had done all the good you possibly could to all men, yet this does not at all alter the case: still you must be born again. Without this nothing will do any good to your poor, sinful, polluted soul. "Nay, but I constantly attend all the ordinances of God: I keep to my church and sacrament." It is well you do. But all this will not keep you from hell, except you be born again. Go to church twice a day, go to the Lord's table every week, say ever so many prayers in private, read ever so many good books, still you must be born again: none of these things will stand in the place of the New Birth.
no, nor any thing under heaven. Let this therefore, if you have not already experienced this inward work of God, be your continual prayer, "Lord, add this to all thy blessings, let me be born again. Deny whatever thou pleasest, but deny not this, let me be born from above. Take away whatsoever seemeth thee good, reputation, fortune, friends, health. Only give me this, to be born of the Spirit! To be received among the children of God. Let me be born, "not of corruptible seed, but incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever." And then let me daily "grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ!"
SERMON LI.

On the WILDERNESS STATE.

JOHN XVI. 22.

"Ye now have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you."

1. AFTER God had wrought a great deliverance for Israel, by bringing them out of the house of bondage, they did not immediately enter into the land which he had promised to their fathers, but wandered out of the way in the wilderness, and were variously tempted and distrest. In like manner, after God has delivered them that fear him from the bondage of sin and Satan; after they are justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus yet not many of them immediately enter into the rest which remaineth for the people of God. The greater part of them wander more or less, out of the good way into which he hath brought them. They come, as it were, into a waste and howling desert, where they are variously tempted and tormented. And this, some, in allusion to the case of the Israelites, have termed, A wilderness state.

2. Certain it is, that the condition wherein these are, has a right to the tenderest compassion.
They labour under an evil and fore disease; though one that is not commonly understood. And for this very reason, it is the more difficult for them to find a remedy. Being in darkness themselves, they cannot be supposed to understand the nature of their own disorder. And few of their brethren, nay, perhaps, of their teachers, know either what their sickness is, or how to heal it. So much the more need there is to enquire, first, What is the nature of this disease; secondly, What is the cause? and thirdly, What is the cure of it?

I. And first, What is the nature of this disease, into which so many fall, after they have believed? Wherein does it properly consist? And what are the genuine symptoms of it? It properly consists in the loss of that faith which God once wrought in their heart. They that are in the wilderness, have not now that divine evidence, that satisfactory conviction of things not seen, which they once enjoyed. They have not now that inward demonstration of the Spirit, which before enabled each of them to say, The life I live, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. The light of heaven does not now shine in their hearts, neither do they see him that is invisible: but darkness is again on the face of their souls, and blindness on the eyes of their understanding. The Spirit no longer witnesses with their spirits, that they are the children of God; neither does he continue, as the Spirit of Adoption, crying in their hearts, Abba, Father. They have not now a sure trust in his love, and a liberty of approaching him with holy boldness. Though he slay me, yet will I trust in him, is no more the language
language of their heart; but they are thorn of their strength, and become weak and feeble-minded, even as other men.

2. Hence secondly, proceeds the loss of love, which cannot but rise or fall, at the same time, and in the same proportion, with true, living faith. Accordingly, they that are deprived of their faith, are deprived of the love of God also. They cannot now say, "Lord, thou knowest all things: thou knowest that I love thee." They are not now happy in God, as every one is, that truly loves him. They do not delight in him as in time past, and "smell the odour of his ointments." Once, all their "desire was unto him, and to the remembrance of his Name." But now even their desires are cold and dead, if not utterly extinguished. And as their love of God is waxed cold, so is also their love of their neighbour. They have not now that zeal for the souls of men, that longing after their welfare, that fervent, restless, active desire of their being reconciled to God. They do not feel those "bewsels of mercies for the sheep that are lost, that tender "compassion for the ignorant, and them that are out of the way." Once they were gentle toward all men, meekly instructing such as opposed the truth, and if any was overtaken in a fault, "restoring such a one in the spirit of meekness." But after a suspense perhaps of many days, anger begins to regain its power. Yea, peevishness and impatience thrust sore at them, that they may fall. And it is well, if they are not sometimes driven, even to "render evil for evil, and railing for railing."

3. In consequence of the loss of faith and love, follows, thirdly, loss of joy in the Holy Ghost.
For if the loving consciousness of pardon be no more, the joy resulting therefrom cannot remain. If the Spirit does not witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God, the joy that flowed from that inward witness, must also be at an end. And in like manner, they who once rejoiced with joy unspeakable, in hope of the glory of God, now they are deprived of that hope full of immortality, are deprived of the joy it occasioned: as also of that which resulted from a consciousness of the love of God then shed abroad in their hearts. For the cause being removed, so is the effect: the fountain being dammed up, those living waters spring no more, to refresh the thirsty soul.

4. With loss of faith and love and joy, there is also joined, fourthly, the loss of that peace, which once past all understanding. That sweet tranquility of mind, that composure of spirit is gone. Painful doubt returns: doubt whether we ever did, and perhaps whether we ever shall believe. We begin to doubt, whether we ever did find in our hearts the real testimony of the Spirit; Whether we did not rather deceive our own souls, and mistake the voice of nature for the voice of God? Nay, and perhaps, whether we shall ever hear his voice, and find favour in his sight. And these doubts are again joined with servile fear, with that fear, which hath torment. We fear the wrath of God, even as before we believed: we fear lest we should be cast out of his presence; and thence sink again into that fear of death, from which they were before wholly delivered.

5. But even this is not all. For loss of peace is accompanied with loss of power, We know every
every one who has peace with God, through Jesus Christ, has power over all sin. But whenever he loses the peace of God, he loses also the power over sin. While that peace remained, power also remained, even over the besetting sin; whether it were the sin of his nature, his constitution, the sin of his education, or that of his profession: yea and over those evil tempers and desires, which till then he could not conquer. Sin had then no more dominion over him: But he hath now no more dominion over sin. He may struggle indeed, but he cannot overcome; the crown is fallen from his head. His enemies again prevail over him, and more or less bring him into bondage. The glory is departed from him, even the kingdom of God which was in his heart. He is dispossessed of righteousness, as well as of peace and joy in the Holy Ghost.

II. 1. Such is the nature of what many have termed, and not improperly, The Wilderness State. But the nature of it may be more fully understood by enquiring, secondly, What are the causes of it? These indeed are various. But I dare not rank among those, the bare, arbitrary, sovereign will of God. He "rejoiceth in the prosperity of his servants:" he delighteth not to afflict or grieve the children of men." His invariable will is our sanctification, attended with "peace and joy in the Holy Ghost." These are his own free gifts: and we are assured the gifts of God are, on his part, without repentance. He never repenteth of what he hath given, or desires to withdraw them from us. Therefore he never deserts us, as some speak: it is we only that desert him.
2. The most usual cause of inward darkness is sin of one kind or another. This it is which generally occasions what is often a complication of sin and misery. And, first, Sin of commission. This may frequently be observed to darken the soul in a moment; especially if it be a known, a wilful, or presumptuous sin. If, for instance, a person, who is now walking in the clear light of God's countenance, should, by any way prevailed on to commit a single act of drunkenness or uncleanness, it would be no wonder, if in that very hour he fell into utter darkness. It is true, there have been some very rare cases, wherein God has prevented this, by an extraordinary display of his pardoning mercy, almost in the very instant. But in general, such an abuse of the goodness of God, so gross an insult on his love, occasions an immediate estrangement from God, and a darkness that may be felt.

3. But it may be hoped, this case is not very frequent; that there are not many, who so despite the riches of his goodness, as while they walk in his light, so grossly and presumptuously to rebel against him. That light is much more frequently lost, by giving way to sins of omission. This indeed does not immediately quench the Spirit, but gradually and slowly. The former may be compared to pouring water upon a fire: the latter to withdrawing the fuel from it. And many times will that loving Spirit reprove our neglect, before he departs from us. Many are the inward checks, the secret notices he gives, before his influences are withdrawn. So that only a train of omissions, wilfully persisted in, can bring us into utter darkness.

4. Perhaps
Perhaps no sin of omission more frequently occasions this, than the neglect of private prayer; the want whereof cannot be supplied by any other ordinance whatever. Nothing can be more plain, than that the life of God in the soul does not continue, much less increase, unless we use all opportunities of communion with God, and pouring out our hearts before him. If therefore we are negligent of this, if we suffer business, company, or any avocation whatever, to prevent these secret exercises of the soul; (or, which comes to the same thing, to make us hurry them over in a slight and careless manner) that life will surely decay. And if we long or frequently intermit them, it will gradually die away.

5. Another sin of omission, which frequently brings the soul of a believer into darkness, is the neglect of what was so strongly enjoined, even under the Jewish dispensation "Thou shalt in any wise rebuke thy neighbour, and not suffer sin upon him: Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thy heart." Now if we do hate our brother in our heart, if we do not rebuke him, when we see him in a fault, but suffer sin upon him; this will soon bring leanness into our own soul; seeing hereby we are partakers of his sin. By neglecting to reprove our neighbour, we make his sin our own. We become accountable for it to God: We saw his danger, and gave him no warning. So, if he perish in his iniquity, God may justly require his blood at our hand. No wonder then, if, by thus grieving the Spirit, we lose the light of his countenance.

6. A third cause of our losing this is, the giving way to some kind of inward sin. For example,
ample: we know, every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord; and that, although this pride of heart should not appear in the outward conversation. Now how easily may a soul filled with peace and joy fall into this snare of the devil? How natural is it for him to imagine, that he has more grace, more wisdom or strength, than he really has? To think more highly of himself than he ought to think? How natural, to glory in something he has received, as if he had not received it? But seeing God continually resists the proud, and giveth grace only to the humble, this must certainly obscure, if not wholly destroy, the light which before shone on his heart.

7. The same effect may be produced by giving place to anger, whatever the provocation or occasion be: yea, though it were coloured over with the name of zeal for the truth, or for the glory of God. Indeed all zeal, which is any other than the flame of love, is earthly, animal, devilish. It is the flame of wrath: it is flat, sinful anger—neither better nor worse.

And nothing is a greater enemy to the mild, gentle love of God than this: They never did, they never can, sublift together in one breast. In the same proportion as this prevails, love and joy in the Holy Ghost decrease. This is particularly observable in the case of offence; I mean, anger at any of our brethren, at any of those who are united with us, either by civil or religious ties. If we give way to the spirit of offence but one hour, we lose the sweet influences of the Holy Spirit: so that instead of amending them, we destroy ourselves, and become an easy prey to any enemy, that assaulits us.

8. But
8. But suppose we are aware of this snare of the devil, we may be attacked from another quarter. When fierceness and anger are asleep, and love alone is waking, we may be no less endangered by desire, which equally tends to darken the soul. This is the sure effect of any foolish desire, any vain or inordinate affection. If we "let our affection on things of the earth," on any person or thing under the sun; if we desire any thing but God, and what tends to God; if we seek happiness in any creature; the jealous God will surely contend with us: for he cannot admit of any rival. And if we will not hear his warning voice, and return to him with our whole soul; if we continue to grieve him with our idols, and running after other gods, we shall soon be cold, barren and dry, and the god of this world will blind and darken our hearts.

9. But this he frequently does, even when we do not give way to any positive sin. It is enough, it gives him sufficient advantage, if we do not "stir up the gift of God, which is in us," if we do not agonize continually, to enter in at the strait gate; if we do not earnestly strive for the mystery, and take the kingdom of heaven by violence. There needs no more than not to fight, and we are sure to be conquered. Let us only be careless or faint in our mind; let us be easy and indolent, and our natural darkness will soon return, and overspread our soul. It is enough therefore, if we give way to spiritual sloth: this will effectually darken the soul. It will as surely destroy the light of God, if not to swiftly, as murder or adultery.

10. But
But it is well to be observed, that the cause of our darkness (whatsoever it be, whether omission or commission, whether inward, or outward sin) is not always nigh at hand. Sometimes the sin, which occasioned the present distress, may lie at a considerable distance. It might be committed, days or weeks or months before. And that God now withdraws his light and peace, on account of what was done so long ago, is not (as one might at first imagine) an instance of his severity, but rather a proof of his long-suffering and tender mercy. He waited all this time, if haply we would see, acknowledge, and correct what was amiss. And in default of this, he at length shews his displeasure, if thus, at last, he may bring us to repentance.

(II.) 1. Another general cause of this darkness, is ignorance; which is likewise of various kinds. If men know not the scriptures, if they imagine there are passages either in the Old or New Testament, which assert that all believers, without exception, must sometimes be in darkness, this ignorance will naturally bring upon them the darkness which they expect. And how common a case has this been among us? How few are there, that do not expect it? And no wonder, seeing they are taught to expect it: seeing their guides lead them into this way. Not only the mystic writers of the Romish Church, but many of the most spiritual and experimental in our own, (very few of the last century excepted) lay it down with all assurance, as a plain, unquestionable scripture-doctrine, and cite many texts to prove it.

2. Ignor-
2. Ignorance also of the work of God in the soul, frequently occasions this darkness. Men imagine, (because so they have been taught, particularly by writers of the Roman Church, whose plausible assertions too many Protestants have received without due examination), that they are not always to walk in luminous faith: that this is only a lower dispensation; that as they rise higher, they are to leave those sensible comforts, and to live by naked faith: (naked indeed, if it be stript both of love and peace and joy in the Holy Ghost!) That a state of light and joy is good; but a state of darkness and dryness is better: that it is by these alone we can be purified from pride, love of the world, and inordinate self-love; and that therefore we ought neither to expect nor desire, to walk in the light always. Hence it is (though other reasons may concur), that the main body of pious men in the Roman Church, generally walk in a dark uncomfortable way, and if ever they receive, soon lose the light of God.

(III.) 1. A third general cause of this darkness, is temptation. When the candle of the Lord first shines on our head, temptation frequently flees away, and totally disappears. All is calm within: perhaps without too, while God makes our enemies be at peace with us. It is then very natural to suppose, that we shall not see war any more. And there are instances, wherein this calm has continued, not only for weeks, but for months or years. But commonly it is otherwise: in a short time the winds blow, the rains descend: and the floods arise anew. They who know not either the Son or the Father.
and consequently, hate his children, when God slackens the bridle which is in their teeth, will shew that hatred in various instances. As of old, "he that was born after the flesh, persecuted him that was born after the Spirit;" even so it is now; the same cause still producing the same effect. The evil which yet remains in the heart, will then also move afresh: anger and many other roots of bitterness, will endeavour to spring up. At the same time, Satan will not be wanting, to cast in his fiery darts: and the soul will have to wrestle, not only with the world, not only with flesh and blood, but with principalities and powers, with the rulers of the darkness of this world, with wicked spirits in high places. Now when so various assaults are made at once, and perhaps with the utmost violence, it is not strange if it should occasion, not only heaviness, but even darkness in a weak believer. More especially, if he was not watching, if these assaults are made in an hour when he looked not for them: if he expected nothing less, but had fondly told himself,—"The day of evil would return no more."

2. The force of those temptations which arise from within, will be exceedingly heightened, if we before thought too highly of ourselves, as if we had been cleansed from all sin. And how naturally do we imagine this, during the warmth of our first love? How ready are we to believe, that God has fulfilled in us the whole work of faith with power? That because we feel no sin, we have none in us, but the soul is all love? And well may a sharp attack from an enemy, whom we suppose to be not only conquered, but slain, throw us into much heaviness of
of soul, yea, sometimes into utter darkness. Particularly when we reason with this enemy, instead of instantly calling upon God, and casting ourselves upon him by simple faith, who alone knoweth how to deliver his out of temptation.

III. These are the usual causes of this second darkness. Enquire we, thirdly, What is the cure of it?

1. To suppose that this is one and the same in all cases, is a great and fatal mistake: and yet extremely common even among many, who pass for experienced Christians: yea, perhaps take upon them to be teachers in Israel, to be the guides of other souls. Accordingly they know and use but one medicine, whatever be the cause of the distemper. They begin immediately to apply the promises, to preach the gospel, as they call it. To give comfort, is the single point at which they aim; in order to which they say many soft and tender things, concerning the love of God to poor, helpless sinners, and the efficacy of the blood of Christ. Now this is quackery indeed, and that of the worst sort, as it tends, if not to kill men's bodies, yet without the peculiar mercy of God, to destroy both their bodies and souls in hell. It is hard to speak of these "daubers with untempered mortar," these promise-mongers, as they deserve. They well deserve the title, which has been ignorantly given to others: they are spiritual mountebanks. They do, in effect, make the blood of the covenant an unholy thing. They vilely prostitute the promises of God, by thus applying them to all, without distinction. Whereas indeed, the
cure of spiritual, as of bodily diseases, must be as various as the causes of them. The first thing therefore is, to find out the cause, and this will naturally point out the cure.

2. For instance. Is it sin, which occasions darkness? What sin? Is it outward sin of any kind? Does your conscience accuse you of committing any sin, whereby you grieve the Holy Spirit of God? Is it on this account, that he is departed from you, and that joy and peace are departed with him; and how can you expect they should return, till you put away the accursed thing?

Let the wicked forsake his way; cleanse your hands, ye sinners; put away the evil of your doings. So shall your light break out of obscurity: the Lord will return, and abundantly pardon.

3. If upon the clothest search, you can find no sin of commission, which causes the cloud upon your soul, enquire next, if there be not some sin of omission, which separates between God and you? Do you not suffer sin upon your brother? Do you reprove them that sin in your sight? Do you walk in all the ordinances of God?. In public, family, private prayer? If not; if you habitually neglect any one of these known duties, how can you expect, that the light of his countenance should continue to shine upon you? Make haste to strengthen the things that remain: then your soul shall live. To-day, if ye still hear his voice, he will by his grace supply what is lacking. When you hear a voice behind you saying, "This is the way: walk thou in it:" harden not your heart: Be no more disobedient to the heavenly calling. Till the sin, whether of omission or commission, be removed, all comfort is false and deceitful. It is only skinning the
the wound over, which still festers and rankles beneath. Look for no peace within, till you are at peace with God; which cannot be without fruits meet for repentance.

4. But perhaps you are not conscious of even any sin of omission, which impairs your peace and joy in the Holy Ghost. Is there not then some inward sin, which, as a root of bitterness springs up in your heart to trouble you? Is not your dryness or barrenness of soul occasioned by your hearts departing from the living God? Has not the foot of pride come against you? Have you not thought of yourself more highly than you ought to think? Have you not in any respect “sacrificed to your own net, and burnt incense to your own drag?” Have you not ascribed your success in any undertaking to your own courage, or strength, or wisdom? Have you not boasted of something you have received, as though you have not received it? Have you not gloried in any thing, “save the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ?” Have you not fought after or desired the praise of men? Have you not taken pleasure in it? If so, you see the way you are to take. If you have fallen by pride, “humble yourself under the mighty hand of God, and he will exalt you in due time.” Have you not forced him to depart from you, by giving place to anger? Have you not fretted yourself because of the ungodly, or been envious against the evil-doers? Have you not been offended at any of your brethren? Looking at their (real or imagined) sin, so as to sin yourself against the great law of love, by estranging your heart from them? Then look unto the Lord, that you may renew your...
SERMON LI.

Strength, that all this sharpness and coldness may be done away, that love, and peace, and joy, may return together, and you may be invariably kind to each other, and "tender hearted; forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you." Have not you given way to any foolish desire? To any kind or degree of inordinate affection? How then can the love of God have place in your heart, till you put away your idols? Be not deceived: God is not mocked: he will not dwell in a divided heart: As long therefore as you cherish Delilah in your bosom, he has no place there: It is vain to hope for a recovery of his light, till you pluck out the right eye, and cast it from you. O let there be no longer delay. Cry to him, that he may enable you so to do! Bewail your own impotence and helplessness: and, the Lord, being your helper, enter in at the strait gate: take the kingdom of heaven by violence! Cast out every idol from his sanctuary, and the glory of the Lord shall soon appear.

5. Perhaps it is this very thing, the want of striving, spiritual faith, which keeps your soul in darkness. You dwell at ease in the land: There is no war in your coasts, and so you are quiet and unconcerned. You go on in the same even track of outward duties, and are content there to abide. And do you wonder meantime, that your soul is dead? O stir yourself up before the Lord! Arise, and shake yourself from the dust: Wrestle with God for the mighty blessing. Pour out your soul unto God in prayer, and continue therein with all perseverance. Watch! Awake out of sleep and keep awake!
awake! Otherwise there is nothing to be expected, but that you will be alienated more and more from the light and life of God.

6. If, upon the fullest and most impartial examination of yourself, you cannot discern, that you at present give way, either to spiritual sloth, or any other inward or outward sin, then call to mind the time that is past. Consider your former tempers, words and actions. Have these been right before the Lord? "Commune with him in your chamber, and be still," and desire of him to try the ground of your heart, and bring to your remembrance whatever has at any time offended the eyes of his glory. If the guilt of any unrepented sin remain on your soul, it cannot be but you will remain in darkness, till, having been renewed by repentance, you are again washed by faith in "the fountain opened for sin and uncleanness."

7. Entirely different will be the manner of the cure, if the cause of the disease be not sin, but ignorance. It may be, ignorance of the meaning of scripture; perhaps occasioned by ignorant commentators; ignorant at least in this respect, however knowing and learned they may be in other particulars. And in this case, that ignorance must be removed, before we can remove the darkness arising from it. We must shew the true meaning of those texts, which have been misunderstood. My design does not permit me to consider all the passages of scripture, which have been pressed into this service. I shall just mention two or three, which are frequently brought to prove, that all believers must, sooner or later, walk in darkness.
8. One of these is Isaiah l. 10. "Who is among you that feareth the Lord, and obeyeth the voice of his servant, that walketh in darkness and hath no light? Let him trust in the name of the Lord, and stay upon his God." But how does it appear, either from the text or context, that the person here spoken of ever had light? One, who is convinced of sin, feareth the Lord, and obeyeth the voice of his servant." And him we should advise, though he was still dark of soul, and had never seen the light of God's countenance, yet to trust in the name of the Lord, and stay upon his God. This text therefore proves nothing less, than that a believer in Christ "must sometimes walk in darkness."

9. Another text, which has been supposed to speak the same doctrine, is Hosea ii. 14. "I will allure her, and bring her into the wilderness, and speak comfortably unto her." Hence it has been inferred, that God will bring every believer into the wilderness, into a state of deadness and darkness. But it is certain, the text speaks no such thing. For it does not appear, that it speaks of particular believers at all. It manifestly refers to the Jewish nation; and, perhaps, to that only. But if it be applicable to particular persons, the plain meaning of it is this, I will draw him by love; I will next convince him of sin, and then comfort him by my pardoning mercy.

10. A third scripture, from whence the same inference has been drawn, is that above recited, "Ye now have sorrow: but I will see you again; and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you." This has been supposed.
supposed to imply, That God would, after a time withdraw himself from all believers; and that they could not, till after they had thus sorrowed, have the joy, which no man could take from them. But the whole context shews, that our Lord is here speaking personally to the apostles, and no others; and that he is speaking concerning those particular events, his own death and resurrection. "A little while, says he, and ye shall not see me," namely, whilst I am in the grave: "And again, a little while, and ye shall see me," when I am risen from the dead. "Ye will weep and lament, and the world will rejoice: but your sorrow shall be turned into joy."—Ye now have sorrow, because I am about to be taken from your head: but I will see you again, after my resurrection, and your heart shall rejoice. And your joy, which I will then give you, no man taketh from you. All this we know was literally fulfilled, in the particular case of the apostles. But no inference can be drawn from hence, with regard to God's dealings with believers in general.

11. A fourth text, (to mention no more) which has been frequently cited in proof of the same doctrine, is, 1 Pet. iv. 12. Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial, which is to try you. But this is full as foreign to the point as the preceding. The text literally rendered, runs thus: "Beloved, wonder not at the burning, which is among you, which is for your trial." Now, however this may be accommodated to inward trials in a secondary sense, yet primarily, it doubtless refers to martyrdom, and the suffer-
ings connected with it. Neither, therefore, so this text any thing at all to the purpose, for which it is cited. And we may challenge all men to bring one text either from the Old or New Testament, which is any more to the purpose than this.

12. "But is not darkness much more profitable for the soul, than light? Is not the work of God in the heart most swiftly and effectually carried on, during a state of inward suffering? Is not a believer more swiftly and thoroughly purified by sorrow, than by joy? by anguish, and pain, and distress, and spiritual martyrdoms, than by continual peace?" So the mystics teach: so it is written in their books; but not in the Oracles of God. The scripture no where says, that the absence of God best perfects his work in the heart! Rather his presence, and a clear communion with the Father and the Son. A strong conscience of this will do more in an hour, than his absence in an age. Joy in the Holy Ghost will far more effectually purify the soul, than the want of that joy. And the peace of God is the best means of refining the soul from the dross of earthly affections. Away then with the idle conceit, that the kingdom of God is divided against itself; that the peace of God and joy in the Holy Ghost are obstructive of righteousness; and that we are saved, not by faith, but by unbelief; not by hope, but by despair!

13. So long as men dream thus, they may well walk in darkness: nor can the effect cease, till the cause is removed. But yet we must not imagine, it will immediately cease, even when the
THE WILDERNESS STATE. 59

the cause is no more. When either ignorance or sin has caused darkness, one or the other may be removed, and yet the light which was obstructed thereby, may not immediately return. As it is the free gift of God, he may restore it, sooner or later, as it pleases him. In the case of sin, we cannot reasonably expect, that it should immediately return. The sin began before the punishment, which may therefore justly remain, after the sin is at an end. And even in the natural course of things, though a wound cannot be healed, while the dart is sticking in the flesh, yet neither is it healed, as soon as that is drawn out; but forenness and pain may remain long after.

14. Lastly. If darkness be occasioned by manifold, and heavy, and unexpected temptations, the best way of removing and preventing this is, to teach believers always to expect temptation: seeing they dwell in an evil world, among wicked, subtle, malicious spirits, and have an heart capable of all evil. Convince them, that the whole work of Sanctification is not (as they imagined) wrought at once; that, when they first believe they are but as new-born babes, who are gradually to grow up, and may expect many storms, before they come to the full stature of Christ. Above all, let them be instructed, when the storm is upon them, not to reason with the devil, but to pray; to pour out their souls before God, and shew him of their trouble. And these are the persons, unto whom chiefly we are to apply the great and precious promises: (not to the ignorant, till the ignorance is removed; much less to the impenitent sinner.) To these we may
may largely and affectionately declare the loving kindness of God our Saviour, and expatiate upon his tender mercies, which have been ever of old. Here we may dwell upon the faithfulness of God, whose word is tried to the uttermost, and upon the virtue of that blood, which was shed for us, to cleanse us from all sin. And God will then bear witness to his word, and bring their souls out of trouble. He will say, "Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee," Yea, and that light, if thou walk humbly and closely with God, will shine more and more unto the perfect day.
SERMON LII.

ON HEAVINESS THRO' MANIFOLD TEMPTATIONS.

1 PETER i. 6.

"Now, for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness, thro' manifold temptations."

In the preceding discourse, I have particularly spoken of that darkness of mind, into which those are often observed to fall, who once walked in the light of God's countenance. Nearly related to this is the heaviness of soul, which is still more common, even among believers. Indeed almost all the children of God experience this, in an higher or lower degree. And so great is the resemblance between one and the other, that they are frequently confounded together: and we are apt to say indifferently, Such an one is in darkness, or such an one is in heaviness; as if they were equivalent terms, one of which implied no more than the other. But they are far, very far from it. Darkness is one thing; heaviness is another. There is a difference, yea, a wide, an essential difference, between the former and the latter. And such a difference it is, as all the children

Vol. IV. F of -
of God are deeply concerned to understand; otherwise nothing will be more easy, than for them to slide out of heaviness into darkness. In order to prevent this, I will endeavour to shew,

I. What manner of persons those were, to whom the Apostle says, *Ye are in heaviness*; II. What kind of heaviness they were in: III. What were the causes: and IV. What were the ends of it. I shall conclude with some inferences.

I. 1. I am in the first place to shew, What manner of persons those were, to whom the Apostle says, *Ye are in heaviness*. And, first, It is beyond all dispute, that they were believers, at the time the Apostle thus addressed them. For so he expressly says, v. 5. *Ye who are kept thro' the power of God by faith unto salvation*. Again, v. 7. he mentions the trial of their faith, much more precious than that of gold, which perisheth. And yet again, v. 9. he speaks of their receiving the end of their faith, the salvation of their souls. At the same time, therefore, that they were in heaviness, they were possessed of living faith. Their heaviness did not destroy their faith: They still endured, seeing him that is invisible.

2. Neither did their heaviness destroy their peace, the peace that passeth all understanding, which is inseparable from true, living faith. This we may easily gather from the second verse, wherein the Apostle prays, not that grace and peace may be given them, but only, that it may be multiplied unto them; that the blessing, which they already enjoyed, might be more abundantly bestowed upon them.

3. The
3. The persons to whom the Apostle here speaks, were also full of a living hope. For thus he speaks, v. 3. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who, according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again,—me and you, all of us who are sanctified by the Spirit, and enjoy the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ, unto a living hope, unto an inheritance, that is, unto a living hope of an inheritance, incorruptible, undefiled, and that fadeth not away. So that, notwithstanding their heaviness, they still retained an hope full of immortality.

4. And they still rejoiced in hope of the glory of God. They were filled with joy in the Holy Ghost. So v. 8, the Apostle having just mentioned the final Revelation of Jesus Christ, (namely, when he cometh to judge the world) immediately adds, In whom, though now ye see him not (not with your bodily eyes,) yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory. Their heaviness therefore was not only consistent with living hope, but also with joy unspeakable: at the same time they were thus heavy, they nevertheless rejoiced with joy full of glory.

5. In the midst of their heaviness they likewise still enjoyed the love of God, which had been shed abroad in their hearts;—whom, says the Apostle, having not seen, ye love. Though ye have not yet seen him face to face, yet knowing him by faith, ye have obeyed his word, My son, give me thy heart. He is your God, and your Love, and desire of your eyes, and your exceeding great reward. Ye have fought and found happiness in him: ye delight in the Lord, and he hath given you your hearts desire.

6. Once
6. Once more. Though they were heavy, yet were they holy: they retained the same power over sin. They were still kept from this by the power of God: they were obedient children, not fashioned according to their former de res, but, as he that had called them is holy, so were they holy in all manner of conversation. Knowing they were redeemed by the precious blood of Christ, as a Lamb without spot and without blemish, they had, through the faith and hope which they had in God, purified their souls by the Spirit. So that, upon the whole, their heaviness well consisted with faith, with hope, with love of God and man, with the peace of God, with joy in the Holy Ghost, with inward and outward holiness. It did no way impair, much less destroy, any part of the work of God in their hearts. It did not at all interfere with the sanctification of the Spirit, which is the root of all true obedience; neither with the happiness, which must needs result from grace and peace reignining in the heart.

II. 1. Hence we may easily learn, what kind of heaviness they were in: The second thing which I shall endeavour to shew. The word in the original is ἀνεπερέπτεται, made sorry, grieved, from ὁμολοχία, grief or sorrow. This is the constant, literal meaning of the word: and this being observed, there is no ambiguity in the expression, nor any difficulty in understanding it. The persons spoken of here were grieved: The heaviness they were in was neither more nor less than sorrow or grief; a passion, which every child of man is well acquainted with.

2. It is probable, our translators rendered it heaviness (though a less common word) to denote
HEAVINESS THRO' TEMPTATIONS. 65

two things, first, The degree; and next, The continuance of it. It does indeed seem, that it is not a slight or inconsiderable degree of grief which is here spoken of, but such as makes a strong impression upon, and sinks deep into the soul. Neither does this appear to be a transient sorrow, such as passes away in an hour: But rather such as having taken fast hold of the heart, is not presently shaken off, but continues for some time, as a settled temper, rather than a passion, even in them that have living faith in Christ, and the genuine love of God in their hearts.

3. Even in these this heaviness may sometimes be so deep, as to overshadow the whole soul, to give a colour, as it were, to all the affections, such as will appear in the whole behaviour. It may likewise have an influence over the body: particularly in those that are either of a naturally weak constitution, or weakened by some accidental disorder, especially of the nervous kind. In many cases we find "the corruptible body presses down the soul:" In this, the soul rather presses down the body, and weakens it more and more. Nay, I will not say, that deep and lasting sorrow of heart, may not sometimes weaken a strong constitution, and lay the foundation of such bodily disorders, as are not easily removed. And yet all this may consist with a measure of that faith which still worketh by love.

4. This may well be termed a fiery trial: and though it is not the same with that the Apostle speaks of in the fourth chapter, yet many of the expressions there used concerning outward sufferings, may be accommodated to this
SERMON LII.

this inward affliction. They cannot indeed with any propriety be applied to them that are in darkness: these do not, cannot rejoice; neither is it true, that the Spirit of glory and of God resteth upon them. But he frequently doth on those that are in heaviness, so that though sorrowful, yet are they always rejoicing.

III. 1. But to proceed to the third point. What are the causes of such sorrow or heaviness in a true believer? The Apostle tells us clearly; Ye are in heaviness, says he, through manifold temptations: μοιχινιος manifold; not only many in number, but of many kinds. They may be varied and diversified a thousand ways, by the change or addition of numberless circumstances. And this very diversity and variety, makes it more difficult to guard against them. Among these we may rank all bodily disorders: particularly acute diseases, and violent pain of every kind, whether affecting the whole body or the smallest part of it. It is true, some who have enjoyed uninterrupted health and have felt none of these, may make light of them, and wonder that sickness or pain of body, should bring heaviness upon the mind. And perhaps one in a thousand is of so peculiar a constitution, as not to feel pain, like other men. So hath it pleased God to shew his almighty power by producing some of these prodigies of nature, who have seemed not to regard pain at all, though of the severest kind; if that contempt of pain was not owing partly to the force of education, partly to a preternatural cause; to the power either of good or evil spirits, who raised those men above the state of mere
mere nature. But abstracting from these particular cases, it is in general a just observation. That "pain is perfect misery, and extreme
Quite overthrows all patience."

And even where this is prevented by the grace of God, where men do possess their souls in patience, it may nevertheless occasion much inward heaviness, the soul sympathizing with the body.

2. All diseases of long continuance, though less painful, are apt to produce the same effect. When God appoints over us consumption or the chilling and burning ague, if it be not speedily removed, it will not only consume the eyes, but cause sorrow of heart. This is eminently the case, with regard to all those, which are termed nervous disorders. And faith does not overturn the course of nature: Natural causes still produce natural effects. Faith no more hinders the sinking of the spirits (as it is called) in an hysterick illness, than the rising of the pulse in a fever.

3. Again, when "calamity cometh as a whirlwind, and poverty as an armed man," is this a little temptation? Is it strange if it occasion sorrow and heaviness? Although this also may appear but a small thing, to those that stand at a distance, or who look and pass by on the other side, yet it is otherwise to them who feel it. Having food and raiment, (indeed the latter word ἐσπασμένα implies lodging as well as apparel) we may, if the love of God is in our hearts, be therewith content. But what shall they do who have none of these? Who, as it were, embrace the rocks for a shelter? Who have only
only the earth to lie upon, and only the sky to cover them? Who have not a dry, or warm, much less a clean abode for themselves and their little ones? No, nor clothing to keep themselves, or those they love next themselves, from pinching cold, either by day or night? I laugh at the stupid Heathen, crying out

**Nil habet infelix paupertas durius in se, Quam quod ridiculos homines facit!**

Has poverty nothing worse in it than this, that it makes men liable to be laughed at? It is a sign this idle poet talked by rote of the things which he knew not. Is not want of food something worse than this? God pronounced it as a curse upon man, that he should earn it by the sweat of his brow. But how many are there in this Christian country, that toil, and labour, and sweat, and have it not at last, but struggle with weariness and hunger together? Is it not worse, for one after an hard day's labour, to come back to a poor, cold, dirty, uncomfortable lodging, and to find there not even the food which is needful to repair his wasted strength? You that live at ease in the earth, that want nothing but eyes to see, ears to hear, and hearts to understand, how well God hath dealt with you: Is it not worse to seek bread day by day, and find none? Perhaps to find the comfort also of five or six children, crying for what he has not to give. Were it not, that he is restrained by an unseen hand, would he not soon curse God and die? O want of bread! Want of bread! Who can tell what this means, unless he hath felt it himself? I am astonished, it occasions no more than heaviness even in them that believe.

4. Perhaps
4. Perhaps next to this, we may place the death of those who were near and dear unto us: of a tender parent, and one not much declined into the vale of years; of a beloved child, just rising into life, and clasping about our heart; of a friend, that was as our own soul, next the grace of God, the last, best gift of heaven. And a thousand circumstances may enhance the distress: Perhaps the child, the friend, died in our embrace! Perhaps, was snatched away, when we looked not for it! Flourishing, cut down like a flower! In all these cases, we not only may, but ought to be affected: It is the design of God, that we should. He would not have us stocks and stones. He would have our affections regulated, not extinguished. Therefore—"Nature unreprou'd may drop a tear."—There may be sorrow without sin.

5. A still deeper sorrow we may feel, for those who are dead while they live;—on account of the unkindness, ingratitude, apostacy of those, who were united to us in the closest ties. Who can express what a lover of souls may feel for a friend, a brother dead to God? For an husband, a wife, a parent, a child, rushing into sin, as an horse into the battle, and in spite of all arguments and persuasions, hastening to work out his own damnation? And this anguish of spirit may be heightened to an inconceivable degree, by the consideration, that he, who is now poying to destruction, once ran well in the way of life. Whatever he was in time past, serves now to no other purpose, than to make our reflections, on what he is, more piercing and afflative.

6. In
6. In all these circumstances we may be assured, our great adversary will not be wanting to improve his opportunity. He, who is always walking about seeking whom he may devour, will then especially use all his power, all his skill, if haply he may gain any advantage over the soul, that is already cast down. He will not be sparing of his fiery darts, such as are most likely to find an entrance, and to fix most deeply in the heart, by their suitableness to the temptation that assails it. He will labour to inject unbelieving, or blasphemous, or repining thoughts. He will suggest, that God does not regard, does not govern the earth; or, at least, that he does not govern it aright, not by the rules of justice and mercy. He will endeavour to stir up the heart against God, to renew our natural enmity against him. And if we attempt to fight him with his own weapons, if we begin to reason with him, more and more heaviness will undoubtedly ensue, if not utter darkness.

7. It has been frequently supposed, that there is another cause (if not of darkness at least) of heaviness; namely, God's withdrawing himself from the soul, because it is his sovereign will. Certainly he will do this, if we grieve his holy Spirit, either by outward or inward sin; either by doing evil, or neglecting to do good; by giving way either to pride or anger, to spiritual sloth, to foolish desire, or inordinate affection. But that he ever withdraws himself, because he will, merely because it is his good pleasure, I absolutely deny. There is no text in all the Bible, which gives any colour for such a supposition. Nay, it is a supposition contrary not only to many particular texts, but to the whole tenor.
tenor of scripture. It is repugnant to the very nature of God: it is utterly beneath his majesty and wisdom, (as an eminent writer strongly expresses it) "to play at bo-peep with his creatures." It is inconsistent both with his justice and mercy, and with the sound experience of all his children.

8. One more cause of heaviness is mentioned by many of those who are termed mystic authors. And the notion has crept in, I know not how, even among plain people, who have no acquaintance with them. I cannot better explain this, than in the words of a late writer, who relates this, as her own experience. "I continued so happy in my Beloved, that, although I should have been forced to live a vagabond in a desert, I should have found no difficulty in it. This state had not lasted long, when, in effect, I found myself led into a desert.—I found myself in a forlorn condition, altogether poor, wretched, and miserable.—The proper source of this grief is, the knowledge of ourselves, by which we find, that there is an extreme unlikeness between God and us. We see ourselves most opposite to Him, and that our inmost soul is entirely corrupted, depraved, and full of all kind of evil and malignity, of the world and the flesh, and all sorts of abominations." From hence it has been inferred, that the knowledge of ourselves, without which we should perish everlastingly, must, even after we have attained justifying faith, occasion the deepest heaviness.

9. But upon this I would observe, I. In the preceding paragraph, this writer says, "Hearing I had not a true faith in Christ, I offered myself up to God, and immediately felt his love."
It may be so; and yet it does not appear, that this was justification. 'Tis more probable, it was no more, than what are usually termed the drawings of the Father. And if so, the heaviness and darkness which followed, was no other than conviction of sin, which in the nature of things must precede that faith whereby we are justified. 2. Suppose she was justified almost the same moment she was convinced of wanting faith, there was then no time for that gradually increasing self-knowledge, which uses to precede justification. In this case therefore it came after, and was probably the more severe, the less it was expected. 3. It is allowed, there will be a far deeper, a far clearer and fuller knowledge of our inbred sin, of our total corruption by nature, after justification, than ever there was before it. But this need not occasion darkness of soul: I will not say, that it must bring us into heaviness. Were it so, the Apostle would not have used that expression, if need be: for there would be an absolute, indispensable need of it, for all that would know themselves: that is in effect, for all that would know the perfect love of God, and thereby "made meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light." But this is by no means the case: On the contrary, God may increase the knowledge of ourselves to any degree, and increase, in the same proportion, the knowledge of himself and the experience of his love. And in this case, there would be no "desart, no misery, no forlorn condition;" but love and peace and joy gradually springing up into everlasting life.
IV. 1. For what ends then, (which was the fourth thing to be considered) does God permit heaviness to befall so many of his children? The Apostle gives us a plain and direct answer to this important question; "That the trial of their faith, which is much more precious than gold that perisheth, though it be tried by fire, may be found unto praise and honour and glory, at the revelation of Jesus Christ," ver. 7. There may be an allusion to this, in that well-known passage of the fourth chapter (although it primarily relates to quite another thing, as has been already observed:) "Think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, but rejoice that ye are partakers of the sufferings of Christ: that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may likewise rejoice with exceeding great joy." ver. 12, &c.

2. Hence we learn, that the first and great end of God's permitting the temptations, which bring heaviness on his children, is the trial of their faith, which is tried by these, even as gold by the fire. Now we know gold tried in the fire, is purified thereby, is separated from its dross. And so is faith in the fire of temptation; the more it is tried, the more it is purified. Yea, and not only purified, but also strengthened, confirmed, increased abundantly, by so many more proofs of the wisdom and power, the love and faithfulness of God. This then, to inculcate our faith, is one gracious end of God's permitting those manifold temptations.

3. They serve to try, to purify, to confirm and increase that living hope also, whereunto "the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ hath begotten us again of his abundant mercy."

Indeed
SERMON LII.

Indeed our hope cannot but increase, in the same proportion with our faith. On this foundation it stands: Believing in his name, living by faith in the Son of God, we hope for, we have a confident expectation of, the glory which shall be revealed. And consequently, whatever strengthens our faith increases our hope also. At the same time it increases our joy in the Lord, which cannot but attend an hope full of immortality. In this view the Apostle exhorts believers in the other chapter; "Rejoice that ye are partakers of the sufferings of Christ." On this very account; "happy are you; for the Spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you." And hereby ye are enabled, even in the midst of sufferings, to "rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory."

4. They rejoice the more, because the trials, which increase their faith and hope, increase their love also: Both their gratitude to God for all his mercies and their good-will to all mankind. Accordingly the more deeply sensible they are, of the loving kindness of God their Saviour, the more is their heart inflamed with love to him who first loved us. The clearer and stronger evidence they have of the glory that shall be revealed, the more do they love him who hath purchased it for them, and given them the earnest thereof in their hearts. And this, the increase of their love, is another end of the temptations, permitted to come upon them.

5. Yet another is, Their advance in holiness; holiness of heart and holiness of conversation: The latter naturally resulting from the former; for a good tree will bring forth good fruit. And all inward holiness is the immediate fruit of
HEAVINESS THRO' TEMPTATIONS.

of the faith that worketh by love. By this the blessed Spirit purifies the heart from pride, self-will, passion; from love of the world, from foolish and hurtful desires, from vile and vain affections. Beside that, sanctified afflictions have (through the grace of God) an immediate and direct tendency to holiness. Through the operation of his Spirit, they humble more and more, and abase the soul before God. They calm and meeken our turbulent spirit, tame the fierceness of our nature, soften our obstinacy and self-will, crucify us to the world, and bring us to expect all our strength from, and to seek all our happiness in God.

6. And all these terminate in that great end, That our faith, hope, love and holiness, may be found (if it doth not yet appear) unto praise from God himself, and honour from men and angels, and glory assigned by the great Judge, to all, that have endured to the end. And this will be assigned in that awful day to every man according to his works, according to the work which God had wrought in his heart, and the outward works which he has wrought for God: and likewise according to what he had suffered; so that all these trials are unspeakable gain. So many ways do these "light afflictions, which are but for a moment, work out for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory."

7. Add to this the advantage, which others may receive, by seeing out behaviour under affliction. We find by experience, example frequently makes a deeper impression upon us than precept. And what examples have a stronger-influence, not only on those who are
partakers of like precious faith, but even on
them who have not known God, than that of a
foul calm and serene in the midst of storms;
sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; meekly ac-
cepting whatever is the will of God, how-
ever grievous it may be to nature; saying, in
sicknels and pain, "The cup which my Father
hath given me, shall I not drink it?" In loss
or want, "The Lord gave: the Lord hath
taken away: blessed be the Name of the
Lord!"

V. I. I am to conclude with some inferences.
And, first, how wide is the difference between
darkness of soul and heaviness? Which never-
theless are so generally confounded with each
other, even by experienced Christians! Dark-
ness, or the wilderness-state, implies a total loss
of joy in the Holy Ghost; heaviness does not;
in the midst of this we may rejoice with joy
unspeakable. They that are in darkness have
loft the peace of God; they that are in heavi-
ness have not: So far from it, that at the very
time peace as well as grace may be multiplied unto
them. In the former, the love of God is waxed
cold, if it be not utterly extinguished: In the
latter it retains its full force, or rather increases
daily. In these, faith itself, if not totally lost,
is however grievously decayed. Their evidence
and conviction of things not seen, particularly
of the pardoning love of God, is not so clear or
strong as in time past: and their trust in him
is proportionably weakened. Those, though
they see him not, yet have a clear, unshaken
confidence in God, and an abiding evidence of
that love, whereby all their sins are blotted out.
So that as long as we can distinguish faith from
unbelief,
unbelief, hope from despair, peace from war; the love of God from the love of the world; we may infallibly distinguish heaviness from darkness.

2. We may learn from hence, secondly, That there may be need of heaviness, but there can be no need of darkness. There may be need of our being in heaviness for a season, in order to the ends above recited: at least, in this sense, as it is a natural result of those manifold temptations, which are needful to try and increase our faith, to confirm and enlarge our hope, to purify our heart from all unholy tempers, and to perfect us in love. And by consequence they are needful, in order to brighten our crown, and add to our eternal weight of glory. But we cannot say, that darkness is needful, in order to any of these ends. It is no way conducive to them: the loss of faith, hope, love, is surely neither conducive to holiness, nor to the increase of that reward in heaven, which will be in proportion to our holiness on earth.

3. From the Apostle’s manner of speaking we may gather, thirdly, that even heaviness is not always needful. Now, for a season, if need be: so it is not needful for all persons; nor for any person at all times. God is able, he has both power and wisdom, to work when he pleases the same work of grace, in any soul, by other means. And in some instances he does so: he causes those whom it pleaseth him to go on from strength to strength, even till they perfect holiness in his fear, with scarce any heaviness at all: as having an absolute power over the heart of man, and moving all the springs of it at his pleasure. But these cases are rare: God generally sees good
good to try "acceptable men in the furnace of affliction." So that manifold temptations and heaviness, more or less, are usually the portion of his dearest children.

4. We ought therefore, lastly, to watch and pray, and use our utmost endeavours to avoid falling into darkness. But we need not be solicitous how to avoid, so much as how to improve by heaviness. Our great care should be, so to behave ourselves under it, so to wait upon the Lord therein, that it may fully answer all the design of his love, in permitting it to come upon us: that it may be a means of increasing our faith, of confirming our hope, of perfecting us in all holiness. Whenever it comes, let us have an eye to these gracious ends, for which it is permitted, and use all diligence, that we may not "make void the counsel of God against ourselves." Let us earnestly work together with him, by the grace which he is continually giving us, in "purifying ourselves from all pollution both of flesh and spirit," and daily "growing in the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ," till we are received into his everlasting kingdom!
And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.”

I. It has been frequently imagined, that the direction here given related chiefly, if not wholly, to the Apostles; at least to the Christians of the first ages, or those in a state of persecution. But this is a grievous mistake: for although our blessed Lord is here directing his discourse more immediately to his Apostles, and those other disciples, who attended him in the days of his flesh; yet in them he speaks to us, and to all mankind, without any exception or limitation. The very reason of the thing puts it beyond dispute, that the duty, which is here enjoined, is not peculiar to them, or to the Christians of the early ages. It no more regards any particular order of men, or particular time, than any particular country. No: it is of the most universal nature, respecting all times and all persons. Yea, and all things: not meats and drinks only, and things pertaining to the senses. The meaning is, If any man, of whatever
whatever rank, station, circumstances, in any nation, in any age of the world, will effectually come after me, let him deny himself in all things; let him take up his cross, of whatever kind, yea, and that daily, and follow me.

2. The denying ourselves, and the taking up our cross, in the full extent of the expression, is not a thing of small concern: It is not expedient only, as are some of the circumstantialls of Religion; but it is absolutely, indispensably necessary, either to our becoming, or continuing his disciples. It is absolutely necessary, in the very nature of the thing, to our coming after him, and following him. Insomuch that, as far as we do not practise it, we are not his disciples. If we do not continually deny ourselves, we do not learn of him, but of other masters. If we do not take up our cross daily, we do not come after him; but after the world, or the prince of the world, or our own fleshly mind. If we are not walking in the way of the cross, we are not following him; we are not treading in his steps, but going back from, or at least wide of him.

3. It is for this reason, that so many ministers of Christ, in almost every age and nation, particularly since the reformation of the Church from the innovations and corruptions gradually crept into it, have wrote and spoke so largely on this important duty, both in their public discourses, and private exhortations. This induced them to disperse abroad many tracts upon the subject; and some in our own nation. They knew both from the Oracles of God, and from the testimony of their own experience, how impossible it was not to deny our master, unless we will deny ourselves: and how vainly we
ON SELF-DENIAL.

we attempt to follow him that was crucified, unless we take up our own crosses daily.

4. But may not this very consideration make it reasonable to enquire, If so much has been said and wrote on the subject already, what need is there to say or write any more? I answer, There are no considerable numbers, even of people fearing God, who have not had the opportunity either of hearing what has been spoke, or reading what has been wrote upon it. And perhaps if they had read much of what has been written, they would not have been much profited. Many who have wrote, (some of them large volumes) do by no means appear to have understood the subject. Either they had imperfect views of the very nature of it, (and then they could never explain it to others) or they were unacquainted with the due extent of it; they did not see how exceeding broad this command is: Or they were not sensible of the absolute, the indispensable necessity of it. Others speak of it in so dark, so perplexed, so intricate, so mystical a manner, as if they designed rather to conceal it from the vulgar, than to explain it to common readers. Others speak admirably well, with great clearness and strength, on the necessity of self-denial; but then they deal in generals only, without coming to particular instances, and so are of little use to the bulk of mankind, to men of ordinary capacity and education. And if some of them do descend to particulars, it is to those particulars only, which do not affect the generality of men: since they seldom, if ever, occur in common life: such as the enduring imprisonment or tortures: the giving up, in a literal sense
sense, their houses or lands, their husbands or wives, children, or life itself: to none of which we are called, nor are likely to be, unless God should permit times of public persecution to return. In the mean time, I know of no writer in the English tongue, who has described the nature of self-denial, in plain and intelligible terms, such as lie level with common understandings, and applied it to those little particulars, which daily occur in common life. A discourse of this kind is wanted still: and it is wanted the more, because in every stage of the spiritual life, although there is a variety of particular hindrances, of our attaining grace or growing therein, yet are all resolvable into these general ones, either we do not deny ourselves, or we do not take up our cross.

In order to supply this defect in some degree, I shall endeavour to shew, first, What it is for a man to deny himself, and what to take up his cross: and secondly, That if a man be not fully Christ's disciple, it is always owing to the want of this.

I. 1. I shall, first, endeavour to shew, What it is for a man to deny himself, and take up his cross daily. This is a point, which is of all others most necessary to be considered, and thoroughly understood, even on this account, that it is of all others most opposed by numerous, and powerful enemies. All our nature must certainly rise up against this, even in its own defence: the world consequently, the men who take nature not grace for their guide, abhor the very sound of it. And the great enemy of our souls, well knowing its importance, cannot but move every stone against it: But this is not all; even
ON SELF-DENIAL.

even those, who have in some measure shaken off the yoke of the devil, who have experienced, especially of late years, a real work of grace in their hearts, yet are no friends to this grand doctrine of christianity, though it is so peculiarly insisted on by their Master. Some of them are as deeply and totally ignorant concerning it, as if there was not one word about it in the Bible. Others are farther off still, having unawares imbibed strong prejudices against it. These they have received partly from outside christians: men of a fair speech and behaviour, who want nothing of godliness, but the power, nothing of religion, but the spirit: and partly from those who did once, if they do not now, "taste of the powers of the world to come." But are there any of these, who do not both practise self-denial themselves, and recommend it to others? You are little acquainted with mankind if you doubt of this. There are whole bodies of men, who only do not declare war against it. To go no farther than London: Look upon the whole body of Predestinarians, who, by the free mercy of God, have lately been called out of the darkness of nature, into the light of faith. Are they patterns of self-denial? How few of them, even profess to practise it at all? How few recommend it themselves, or are pleased with them that do! Rather do they not continually represent it in the most odious colours; as if it were seeking salvation by works, or seeking to establish our own righteousness? And how readily do Antinomians of all kinds, from the smooth Moravian, to the boisterous, foul-mouthed Ranter, join the cry, with their silly, unmeaning cant of legality, and preaching the law? Therefore you are in constant danger of being wheedled,
wheedled, hectored, or ridiculed out of this important gospel-doctrine, either by false teachers, or false brethren, (more or less beguiled from the simplicity of the gospel) if you are not deeply grounded therein. Let fervent prayer then go before, accompany, and follow, what you are now about to read, that it may be written in your heart by the finger of God, so as never to be erased.

2. But what is self-denial? Wherein are we to deny ourselves? And whence does the necessity of this arise? I answer, The will of God is the supreme, unalterable rule for every intelligent creature: equally binding every angel in heaven, and every man upon earth. Nor can it be otherwise: This is the natural, necessary result of the relation between creatures and their Creator. But if the will of God be our one rule of action, in every thing, great and small, it follows by undeniable consequence, that we are not to do our own will in any thing. Here, therefore, we see at once the nature, with the ground and reason of self-denial. We see the nature of self-denial: It is the denying or refusing to follow our own will, from a conviction that the will of God is the only rule of action to us. And we see the reason thereof, because we are creatures; because “it is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves.”

3. This reason for self-denial must hold, even with regard to the angels of God in heaven; and with regard to man, innocent and holy, as he came out of the hands of his Creator. But a farther reason for it arises from the condition, wherein all men are since the fall. We are all now “shapen in wickedness, and in
fin did our mother conceive us." Our nature is altogether corrupt, in every power and faculty. And our will, depraved equally with the rest, is wholly bent to indulge our natural corruption. On the other hand, it is the will of God, that we resist and counteract that corruption, not at some times, or in some things only, but at all times, and in all things. Here, therefore, is a farther ground for constant and universal self-denial.

4. To illustrate this a little further. The will of God is a path leading straight to God. The will of man, which once ran parallel with it, is now another path, not only different from it, but in our present state, directly contrary to it: It leads from God. If, therefore, we walk in the one, we must necessarily quit the other. We cannot walk in both. Indeed a man of faint heart and feeble hands, may go in two ways, one after the other. But he cannot walk in two ways at the same time: He cannot, at one and the same time, follow his own will, and follow the will of God: He must choose the one or the other; denying God's will, to follow his own; or denying himself, to follow the will of God.

5. Now, it is undoubtedly pleasing for the time, to follow our own will, by indulging, in any instance that offers, the corruption of our nature. But by following it in any thing, we so far strengthen the perverseness of our will; and by indulging it, we continually increase the corruption of our nature. So by the food, which is agreeable to the palate, we often increase a bodily disease. It gratifies the taste;
but it inflames the disorder. It brings pleasure; but it also brings death.

6. On the whole then, to deny ourselves is, to deny our own will, where it does not fall in with the will of God, and that however pleasing it may be. It is, to deny ourselves any pleasure which does not spring from, and lead to God: That is, in effect, to refuse going out of our way, though into a pleasant, flowry path; to refuse what we know to be deadly poison, though agreeable to the taste.

7. And every one, that would follow Christ, that would be his real disciple, must not only deny himself, but take up his cross also. A cross is, any thing contrary to our will, any thing displeasing to our nature. So that taking up our cross goes a little farther than denying ourselves; it rises a little higher, and is a more difficult task to flesh and blood; it being more easy to forego pleasure, than to endure pain.

8. Now in running the race, which is set before us, according to the will of God, there is often a cross lying in the way; that is, something which is not only not joyous, but grievous, something which is contrary to our will, which is displeasing to our nature. What then is to be done? The choice is plain: either we must take up our cross, or we must turn aside from the way of God, from the holy commandment delivered to us; if we do not stop altogether, or turn back to everlasting perdition.

9. In order to the healing of that corruption, that evil disease, which every man brings with him into the world, it is often needful to pluck out, as it were, a right eye, to cut off a right hand; so painful is either the thing itself, which
which must be done, or the only means of doing it: the parting, suppose, with a foolish desire, with an inordinate affection: or a separation from the object of it, without which it can never be extinguished. In the former kind, the tearing away such a desire or affection, when it is deeply rooted in the soul, is often like the piercing of a sword; yea, like the dividing asunder of the soul and spirit, the joints and marrow. The Lord then sits upon the soul, as a refiner’s fire, to burn up all the dross thereof. And this is a cross indeed: it is essentially painful: it must be so in the very nature of the thing. The soul cannot be thus torn asunder, it cannot pass through the fire, without pain.

10. In the latter kind, the means to heal a sin-sick soul, to cure a foolish desire, an inordinate affection, are often painful, not in the nature of the thing, but from the nature of the disease. So when our Lord said to the rich young man, Go, sell that thou hast, and give it to the poor, (as well knowing, this was the only means of healing his covetousness,) the very thought of it gave him so much pain, that he went away sorrowful; choosing rather to part with his hope of heaven, than his possessions on earth. This was a burden he could not consent to lift, a cross he would not take up. And in the one kind or the other, every follower of Christ will surely have need to take up his cross daily.

11. The taking up, differs a little from bearing his cross. We are then properly said to bear our cross, when we endure what is laid upon us without our choice, with meekness and resignation. Whereas we do not properly take up
SERMON LIII.

Up our cross, but when we voluntarily suffer what is in our power to avoid: when we willingly embrace the will of God, though contrary to our own: when we chuse what is painful, because it is the will of our wise and gracious Creator.

12. And thus it behoves every disciple of Christ to take up, as well as to bear, his cross. Indeed, in one sense, it is not his alone: it is common to him, and many others: Seeing "there is no temptation befalls any man, or μὴ ἀνθρωπίνος: but such as is common to men," such as is incident and adapted to their common nature, and situation in the present world. But in another sense, as it is considered with all its circumstances, it is his; peculiar to himself: It is prepared of God for him: It is given by God to him, as a token of his love. And if he receives it as such, and (after using such means to remove the pressure, as christian wisdom directs,) lies as clay in the potter's hand; it is disposed and ordered by God for his good, both with regard to the quality of it, and in respect to its quantity and degree, its duration, and every other circumstance.

13: In all this, we may easily conceive our blessed Lord to act as the physician of our souls, not merely "for his own pleasure, but for our profit, that we may be partakers of his holiness." If, in searching our wounds, he puts us to pain, it is only in order to heal them. He cuts away what is putrid or unsound, in order to preserve the sound part. And if we freely chuse the loss of a limb, rather than the whole body should perish, how much more should we chuse, figuratively, to cut off a right hand,
ON SELF-DENIAL.

I'and, rather than the whole soul should be cast into hell?

14. We see plainly then both the nature and ground of taking up our cross. It does not imply the disciplining ourselves, (as some speak;) the literally tearing our own flesh; the wearing haircloth, or iron girdles, or any thing else that would impair our bodily health: (although we know not what allowance God may make for those, who act thus through involuntary ignorance;) but the embracing the will of God, though contrary to our own; the chusing wholesome, though bitter, medicines; the freely accepting temporary pain, of whatever kind, and in whatever degree, when it is either essentially, or accidentally necessary to eternal pleasure.

II. I am secondly, to shew, That it is always owing to the want either of self-denial, or taking up his cross, that any man does not thoroughly follow him, is not fully a disciple of Christ.

It is true, this may be partly owing in some cases, to the want of the means of grace; of hearing the true word of God spoken with power; of the sacraments, or of Christian fellowship. But where none of these is wanting, the great hindrance of our receiving, or growing in the grace of God, is always the want of denying ourselves, or taking up our cross.

2. A few instances will make this plain. A man hears the word, which is able to save his soul. He is well pleased with what he hears, acknowledges the truth, and is a little affected by it. Yet he remains "dead in trespasses and sins," senseless and unawakened. Why is this?
this? Because he will not part with his bosom-sin, though he now knows it is an abomination to the Lord. He came to hear, full of lust and unholy desire; and he will not part with them. Therefore no deep impression is made upon him, but his foolish heart is still hardened: That is, he is still senseless and unawakened, because he will not deny himself.

3. Suppose he begins to awake out of sleep; and his eyes are a little opened, Why are they so quickly closed again? Why does he again sink into the sleep of death? Because he again yields to his bosom-sin; he drinks again of the pleasing poison. Therefore it is impossible, that any lasting impression should be made upon his heart. That is, he relapses into his fatal insensibility, because he will not deny himself.

4. But this is not the case with all. We have many instances of those, who when once awakened sleep no more. The impressions once received do not wear away: They are not only deep, but lasting. And yet many of these have not found what they seek: They mourn, and yet are not comforted. Now why is this? It is because they do not "bring forth fruits meet for repentance:” Because they do not according to the grace they have received, cease from evil and do good. They do not cease from the easily besetting sin, the sin of their constitution, of their education, or of their profession: Or they omit doing the good they may, and know they ought to do, because of some disagreeable circumstance attending it: that is, they do not attain faith, because they will not deny themselves, or take up their cross.

5. But
5. But this man did receive "the heavenly gift." He did "taste of the powers of the world to come." He saw "the light of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ." The "peace which passeth all understanding," did "rule his heart and mind; and the love of God was shed abroad therein, by the Holy Ghost which was given unto him." Yet he is now weak as another man. He again relishes the things of earth, and has more taste for the things which are seen, than for those which are not seen. The eye of his understanding is closed again, so that he cannot "see him that is invisible." His love is waxed cold, and the peace of God no longer rules in his heart. And no marvel; for he has again given place to the devil, and grieved the Holy Spirit of God. He has turned again unto folly, to some pleasing sin, if not in outward act, yet in heart. He has given place to pride, or anger, or desire, to self-will, or stubbornness. Or he did not stir up the gift of God which was in him; he gave way to spiritual sloth, and would not be at the pains of "praying always, and watching thereunto with all perseverance." That is, he made shipwreck of the faith, for want of self-denial and taking up his cross daily.

6. But perhaps he has not made shipwreck of the faith: He has still a measure of the Spirit of Adoption, which continues to witness with his spirit that he is a child of God. However he is not "going on to perfection:" He is not, as one, hungering and thirsting after righteousness, panting after the whole image and full enjoyment of God, as the hart after the water-brook. Rather he is weary and faint in his
his faint in his mind, and as it were hovering between life and death. And why is he thus, but because he hath forgotten the word of God, "By works is faith made perfect?" He does use all diligence, in working the works of God. He does not "continue instant in prayer," private as well as public; in communicating, hearing, meditation, fasting, and religious conference. If he does not wholly neglect some of these means, at least he does not use them all, with his might. Or he is not zealous of works of charity, as well as works of piety. He is not merciful after his power, with the full ability which God giveth. He does not fervently serve the Lord, by doing good to men, in every kind, and in every degree he can, to their souls as well as their bodies. And why does he not continue in prayer? Because in times of dryness it is pain and grief unto him. He does not continue in hearing at all opportunities, because sleep is sweet; or it is cold, or dark, or rainy. But why does he not continue in works of mercy? Because he cannot feed the hungry, or clothe the naked, unless he retrench the expense of his own apparel, or use cheaper and less pleasing food. Besides which, the visiting the sick, or those that are in prison, is attended with many disagreeable circumstances. And so are most works of spiritual mercy; reproof, in particular. He would reprove his neighbour; but sometimes shame, sometimes fear comes between. For he may expose himself not only to ridicule, but to heavier inconveniencies too. Upon these and the like considerations, he omits one or more; if not all works of mercy and piety. Therefore his faith is not made perfect, neither
neither can he grow in grace: namely, because he will not "deny himself, and take up his daily cross."

7. It manifestly follows, That it is always owing to the want either of self-denial or taking up his cross, that a man does not thoroughly follow his Lord, that he is not fully a disciple of Christ. It is owing to this, that he, who is dead in sin, does not awake, though the trumpet be blown: That he, who begins to awake out of sleep, yet has no deep or lasting conviction: That he, who is deeply and lastingly convinced of sin, does not attain remission of sins: That some, who have received this heavenly gift, retain it not, but make shipwreck of the faith: And that others, if they do not draw back to perdition, yet are weary and faint in their mind, and do not reach the mark of the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

III. 1. How easily may we learn from hence, that they know neither the scripture nor the power of God, who directly or indirectly, in public or in private, oppose the doctrine of self-denial and the daily cross. How totally ignorant are these men, of an hundred particular texts, as well, as of the general tenor of the whole Oracles of God? And how entirely unacquainted must they be, with true, genuine, christian experience? Of the manner wherein the Holy Spirit ever did, and does at this day, work in the souls of men? They may talk indeed very loudly and confidently, (as a natural fruit of ignorance,) as though they were the only men, who understood either the word of God, or the experience, of his children. But, their words.
words are, in every sense, vain words: They are weighed in the balance and found wanting.

2. We may learn from hence, secondly, the real cause why not only many particular persons, but even bodies of men, who were once burning and shining lights, have now lost both their light and heat. If they did not hate and oppose, they at least lightly esteemed this precious gospel doctrine. If they did not boldly say, Abnegationem omnem proculamur, internectioni datum: “We trample all self-denial under foot, we devote it to destruction;” yet they neither valued it according to its high importance, nor took any pains in practising it. Hanc mystici doent, said that great bad man, The mystic writers teach self-denial:—No, the inspired writers. And God teaches it to every soul, who is willing to hear his voice.

3. We may learn from hence, thirdly, that it is not enough for a minister of the gospel, not to oppose the doctrine of self-denial, to say nothing concerning it. Nay, he cannot satisfy his duty, by saying a little in favour of it. If he would indeed be pure from the blood of all men, he must speak of it frequently and largely: He must inculcate the necessity of it, in the clearest and strongest manner. He must press it with his might, on all persons, at all times, and in all places: Laying, “line upon line, line upon line, precept upon precept, precept upon precept.” So shall he have a conscience void of offence: So shall he save his own soul and those that hear him.

4. Lastly. See that you apply this, every one of you, to your own soul. Meditate upon it when you are in secret: ponder it in your heart.
'ON SELF-DENIAL.

heart. Take care not only to understand it thoroughly, but to remember it to your life's end. Cry unto the strong for strength, that you may no sooner understand, than enter upon the practice of it. Delay not the time, but practice it immediately, from this very hour: Practice it universally, on every one of the thousand occasions, which will occur in all circumstances of life. Practice it daily, without intermission, from the hour you first set your hand to the plough, and perseveringly enduring therein to the end, till your spirit returns to God.
SERMON LIV.

The CURE of EVIL-SPEAKING.

MATTHEW XVIII. 15, 16, 17.

"If thy brother shall sin against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: If he will hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

"But if he will not hear, take with thee one or two more, that by the mouth of two or three witnesses, every word may be established.

"And if he will not hear them, tell it to the Church: But if he will not hear the Church, let him be to thee as an heathen man, and a publican."

"Speak evil of no man," says the great Apostle: as plain a command as "Thou shalt do no murder." But who, even among christians, regards this command? Yea, how few are there, that so much as understand it? What is Evil-speaking? It is not (as some suppose) the same with lying or slandering. All a man says may be as true as the Bible; and yet the saying of it is evil-speaking. For evil-speaking is neither more nor less, than speaking evil
evil of an absent person, relating something evil which was really done or said, by one that is not present, when it is related. Suppose, having seen a man drunk, or heard him curse or swear, I tell this when he is absent; it is evil-speaking. In our language, this is also by an extremely proper name termed backbiting. Nor is there any material difference between this and what we usually file tale-bearing. If the tale be delivered in a soft and quiet manner, (perhaps with expressions of good-will to the person, and of hope, that things may not be quite so bad) then we call it whispering. But in whatever manner it be done, the thing is the same; the same in substance if not in circumstance. Still it is evil-speaking; still this command, Speak evil of no man, is trampled under foot, if we relate to another the fault of a third person, when he is not present to answer for himself.

2. And how extremely common is this sin, among all orders and degrees of men! How do high and low, rich and poor, wise and foolish, learned and unlearned, run into it continually! Persons, who differ from each other in all things else, nevertheless agree in this. How few are there, that can testify before God, "I am clear in this matter: I have always set a watch before my mouth, and kept the door of my lips?" What conversation do you hear of any considerable length, whereof evil-speaking is not one ingredient? And that even among persons, who, in the general, have the fear of God before their eyes, and do really desire to have a conscience void of offence, toward God, and toward man.
3. And the very commonness of this sin makes it difficult to be avoided. As we are encompassed with it on every side, so, if we are not deeply sensible of the danger, and continually guarding against it, we are liable to be carried away by the torrent. In this instance, almost the whole of mankind is, as it were, in a conspiracy against us. And their example steals upon us, we know not how; so that we insensibly slide into the imitation of it. Besides, it is recommended from within, as well as from without. There is scarce any wrong temper in the mind of man, which may not be occasionally gratified by it, and consequently incline us to it. It gratifies our pride, to relate those faults of others, whereof we think ourselves not to be guilty. Anger, resentment, and all unkind tempers are indulged, by speaking against those, with whom we are displeased. And in many cases, by reciting the sins of their neighbours, men indulge their own foolish and hurtful desires.

4. Evil-speaking is the more difficult to be avoided, because it frequently attacks us in disguise. We speak thus, out of a noble, generous, (it is well, if we do not say), holy indignation against these vile creatures! We commit sin, from mere hatred of sin! We serve the devil, out of pure zeal for God! It is merely in order to punish the wicked, that we run into this wickedness. “So do the passions (as one speaks) all justify themselves,” and palm sin upon us, under the veil of holiness.

5. But is there no way to avoid the snare? Unquestionable there is. Our blessed Lord has marked out a plain way for his followers, in the
the words above recited. None, who warily and steadily walk in this path, will ever fall into evil-speaking. This rule is either an infallible preventive, or a certain cure of it. In the preceding verses, our Lord had said, "Woe to the world because of offences." Unspeakable misery will arise in the world, from this baleful fountain. (Offences are, all things, whereby any one is turned out of, or hindered in, the ways of God.) "For it must be that offences come." Such is the nature of things: Such the weakness, folly, and wickedness of mankind. "But wo to that man," miserable is that man, "by whom the offence cometh. Wherefore if thy hand, thy foot, thine eye, cause thee to offend:" If the most dear enjoyment, the most beloved and useful person, turn thee out of, or hinder thee in the way, "pluck it out, cut them off, and cast them from thee." But how can we avoid giving offence to some, and being offended at others? Especially, suppose they are quite in the wrong, and we see it with our own eyes? Our Lord here teaches us how: He lays down a sure method of avoiding offences, and evil-speaking together. "If thy brother shall sin against thee, go and tell him of his fault, between thee and him alone: if he will hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, take with thee one or two more, that by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he will not hear them, tell it to the Church; but if he will not hear the Church, let him be to thee as an heathen man and a publican."
I. First, If thy brother shall sin against thee, go and tell him of his fault, between thee and him alone. The most literal way of following this first rule, where it is practicable, is the best. Therefore if thou seest with thine own eyes a brother, a fellow-christian, commit undeniable sin, or hearest it with thine own ears, so that it is impossible for thee to doubt the fact, then thy part is plain: Take the very first opportunity of going to him: and if thou canst have access, tell him of his fault between thee and him alone. Indeed great care is to be taken that this is done in a right spirit, and in a right manner.—The success of a reproof greatly depends on the spirit wherein it is given. Be not therefore wanting in earnest prayer to God, that it may be given in a lowly spirit: with a deep piercing conviction, that it is God alone who maketh thee to differ, and that if any good be done by what is now spoken, God doth it himself. Pray that he would guard thy heart, enlighten thy mind, and direct thy tongue to such words as he may please to bless. See that thou speak in a meek as well as a lowly spirit: for the "wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God." If he be "overtaken in a fault," he can no otherwise be restored than "in the spirit of meekness." If he opposes the truth, yet he cannot be brought to the knowledge thereof, but by gentleness. Still speak in a spirit of tender love, "which many waters cannot quench." If love is not conquered, it conquers all things? Who can tell the force of love?

Love
ON EVIL-SPEAKING.

Love can bow down the stubborn neck,
The stone to flesh convert;
Soften, and melt, and pierce, and break
An adamantine heart.

Confirm then your love toward him, and you will thereby "heap coals of fire upon his head."

2. But see that the manner also wherein you speak, be according to the gospel of Christ. Avoid every thing in look, gesture, word and tone of voice, that favours of pride or self-sufficiency. Studiously avoid every thing magisterial or dogmatical, every thing that looks like arrogance or assuming. Beware of the most distant approach to disdain, overbearing, or contempt. With equal care avoid all appearance of anger, and though you use great plainness of speech, yet let there be no reproach, no railing accusation, no token of any warmth, but that of love. Above all, let there be no shadow of hate or ill-will, no bitterness or sourness of expression; but use the air and language of sweetness as well as gentleness, that all may appear to flow from love in the heart. And yet this sweetness need not hinder your speaking in the most serious and solemn manner: as far as may be, in the very words of the oracles of God, (for there are none like them) and as under the eye of him who is coming to judge the quick and dead.

3. If you have not an opportunity of speaking to him in person, or cannot have access, you may do it by a messenger; by a common friend in whose prudence, as well as uprightness, you can thoroughly confide. Such a person,
son, speaking in your name, and in the spirit and manner above described, may answer the same end, and in a good degree supply your lack of service. Only beware you do not feign the want of opportunity, in order to shun the cross: neither take it for granted, that you cannot have access, without ever making the trial. Whenever you can speak in your own person, it is far better. But you should rather do it by another, than not at all: This way is better than none.

4. But what if you can neither speak yourself, nor find such a messenger as you can confide in. If this be really the case, it then only remains, to write. And there may be some circumstances which make this the most advi-
able way of speaking. One of these circumstances is, when the person with whom we have to do, is of so warm and impetuous a temper, as does not easy bear reproof, especially from an equal or inferior. But it may be so introduced and softened in writing as to make it far more tolerable. Besides, many will read the very same words, which they could not bear to hear. It does not give so violent a shock to their pride, nor so sensibly touch their honour. And suppose it makes little impression at first, they will perhaps give it a second reading, and upon farther consideration, lay to heart, what before they disregarded. If you add your name, this is nearly the same thing, as going to him, and speaking in person. And this should always be done, unless it be rendered improper by some very particular reason.

5. It should be well observed, not only that this is a step which our Lord absolutely com-
mands
mands us to take, but that he commands us to take this step first, before we attempt any other. No alternative is allowed, no choice of any else: This is the way; walk thou in it. It is true, he enjoins us, if need require, to take two other steps. But they are to be taken successively after this step, and neither of them before it. Much less are we to take any other step, either before, or beside this. To do any thing else, or not to do this, is therefore equally inexcusable.

6. Do not think to excuse yourself for taking an entirely different step, by saying, "Why, I did not speak to any one, till I was so burdened, that I could not refrain." You was burdened! It was no wonder you should; unless your conscience was feared. For you was under the guilt of sin, of disobeying a plain commandment of God. You ought immediately to have gone and told your brother of his fault between you and him alone. If you did not, how should you be other, than burdened, (unless your heart was utterly hardened), while you was trampling the command of God under foot, and "hating your brother in your heart?" And what a way have you found to unburden yourself? God reproves you for a sin of omission, for not telling your brother of his fault; and you comfort yourself under his reproof, by a sin of commission, by telling your brother's fault to another person! Ease bought by sin is a dear purchase: I trust in God you will have no ease, but will be burdened so much the more, till you go to your brother, and tell him, and no one else.
7. I know but of one exception to this rule. There may be a peculiar case, wherein it is necessary to accuse the guilty though absent, in order to preserve the innocent. For instance: You are acquainted with the design which a man has against the property or life of his neighbour. Now the case may be so circumstanced, that there is no other way of hindering that design from taking effect, but the making it known without delay, to him against whom it is laid. In this case therefore this rule is set aside, as is that of the Apostle; "speak evil of no man:" and it is lawful, yea, it is our bounden duty, to speak evil of an absent person, in order to prevent his doing evil, to others and himself at the same time. But remember, meanwhile, that all evil-speaking is, in its own nature deadly poison. Therefore if you are sometimes constrained to use it as a medicine, yet use it with fear and trembling; seeing it so dangerous a medicine, that nothing but absolute necessity can excuse your using it at all. Accordingly use it as seldom as possible; never but when there is such a necessity: and even then use as little of it as is possible; only so much as is necessary for the end proposed. At all other times, go and tell him of his fault between thee and him alone.

II. 1. But what if he will not hear? If he repay evil for good? If he be enraged rather than convinced? What if he hear to no purpose, and go on still in the evil of his way? We must expect this will frequently be the case; the mildest and tenderest reproof, will have no effect, but the blessing we wished for another, will
will return into our own bosom. And what are we to do then? Our Lord has given us a clear and full direction. Then take with thee one or two more: This is the second step. Take one or two whom you know to be of a loving spirit, lovers of God and of their neighbour. See likewise that they be of a lowly spirit, and "clothed with humility." Let them also be such as are meek and gentle, patient and long-suffering; not apt to "return evil for evil, or railing for railing, but contrariwise blessing." Let them be men of understanding, such as are endowed with wisdom from above; and men unbiassed, free from partiality, free from prejudice of any kind. Care should likewise be taken, that both the persons and their characters be well known to him. And let those that are acceptable to him be chosen, preferable to any others.

2. Love will dictate the manner wherein they should proceed, according to the nature of the case. Nor can any one particular manner be prescribed for all cases. But perhaps in general one might advise, before they enter upon the thing itself, let them mildly and affectionately declare that they have no anger or prejudice toward him, and that it is merely from a principle of good-will, that they now come, or at all concern themselves with his affairs. To make this the more apparent, they might then calmly attend to your repetition of your former conversation with him, and to what he then said in his own defence, before they attempted to determine any thing. After this they would be better able to judge, in what manner to proceed, that by the mouth of two or three
That whatever you have said, may have its full force, by the additional weight of their authority.

3. In order to this, may they not, 1, Briefly repeat what you spoke, and what he answer'd? 2, Inlarge upon, open and confirm the reasons which you had given? 3, Give weight to your reproof, shewing how just, how kind, and how seasonable it was: And lastly, Inforce the advices and persuasions which you had annexed to it? And these may likewise hereafter, if need should require, bear witness of what was spoken.

4. With regard to this, as well as the preceding rule, we may observe, that our Lord gives us no choice, leaves us no alternative, but expressly commands us to do this, and nothing else in the place of it. He likewise directs us, when to do this. Neither sooner nor later. Namely, after we have taken the first, and before we have taken the third step. It is then only, that we are authorized to relate the evil another has done, to those whom we desire to bear a part with us, in this great instance of brotherly love. But let us have a care, how we relate it to any other person, till both these steps have been taken. If we neglect to take these, or if we take any others, what wonder if we are burdened still? For we are sinners against God, and against our neighbour. And how fairly forever we may colour it, yet, if we have any conscience, our sin will find us out, and bring a burden upon our soul.

III. 1. That we may be thoroughly instructed in this weighty affair, our Lord has given
us a still farther direction. *If he will not hear them, then, and not till then, tell it to the Church.* This is the third step. All the question is, How this word, *the Church,* is here to be understood? But the very nature of the thing will determine this, beyond all reasonable doubt. You cannot tell it to the national Church, the whole body of men termed, *the Church of England.* Neither would it answer any christian end, if you could: this, therefore, is not the meaning of the word. Neither can you tell it to that whole body of people in England, with whom you have a more immediate connexion. Nor indeed would this answer any good end: The word, therefore, is not to be understood thus. It would not answer any valuable end, to tell the faults of every particular member to the Church, (if you would so term it) the congregation or society united together in London. It remains that you tell it to the elder, or elders of the Church, to those who are overseers of that flock of Christ, to which you both belong, who watch over yours and his soul, "as they that must give account." And this should be done, if it conveniently can, in the presence of the person concerned, and though plainly, yet with all the tenderness and love, which the nature of the thing will admit. It properly belongs to their office, to determine concerning the behaviour of those under their care, and to rebuke according to the demerit of the offence, *with all authority.* When therefore you have done this, you have done all which the word of God, or the law of love requireth of you. You are not now partaker of his sin, but if he perish, his blood is on his own head. — 2. Here
2. Here also let it be observed, that this, and no other, is the third step which we are to take: And that we are to take it in its order, after the other two; not before the second, much less the first; unless in some very particular circumstance. Indeed in one case, the second step may coincide with this: they may be in a manner one and the same. The elder or elders of the Church may be so connected with the offended brother, that they may set aside the necessity, and supply the place of the one or two witnesses. So that it may suffice to tell it to them, after you have told it to your brother, between you and him alone.

3. When you have done this, you have delivered your own soul. If he will not hear the Church, if he persist in his sin, let him be to thee as an heathen man and a publican. You are under no obligation to think of him any more: Only when you commend him to God in prayer. You need not speak of him any more, but leave him, to his own matter. Indeed you still owe to him, as to all other heathens, earnest, tender good-will. You owe him courtesy, and as occasion offers, all the offices of humanity. But have no friendship, no familiarity with him; no other intercourse than with an open heathen.

4. But if this be the rule by which Christians walk, Which is the land where the Christians live? A few you may possibly find scattered up and down, who make a conscience of observing it. But how very few? How thinly scattered upon the face of the earth? And where is there any body of men, that universally walk thereby? Can we find them in
in Europe? Or, to go no farther, in Great Britain or Ireland? I fear not: I fear we may search these kingdoms throughout, and yet search in vain. Alas, for the Christian world? Alas, for Protestant, for reformed Christians! "O who will rise up with me against the wicked? Who will take God's part" against the evil-speakers? Art thou the man? By the grace of God wilt thou be one, who art not carried away by the torrent? Art thou fully determined, God being thy helper, from this very hour, to set a watch, a continual "watch before thy mouth, and keep the door of thy lips?" From this hour wilt thou walk by this rule "speaking evil of no man?" If thou seest thy brother do evil, wilt thou tell him of his fault between thee and him alone? Afterwards take one or two witnesses, and then only tell it to the Church? If this be the full purpose of thy heart, then learn one lesson well, Hear evil of no man; If there were no hearers, there would be no speakers of evil. And is not (according to the vulgar proverb) the receiver as bad as the thief? If then any begin to speak evil in thy hearing, check him immediately. Refuse to hear the voice of the charmer, charm he ever so sweetly: let him use ever so soft a manner, so mild an accent; ever so many professions of good-will, for him whom he is stabbing in the dark, whom he smiteth under the fifth rib. Resolutely refuse to hear, though the whisperer complain of being burdened till he speak. Burdened! Thou fool, doest thou travail with thy cursed secret as a woman travaileth with child? Go then and be delivered of thy burden, in the way the Lord hath ordained. First, Go and tell thy brother of...
his fault between thee and him alone. Next, take with thee one or two common friends, and tell him in their presence. If neither of these steps take effect, then tell it to the Church. But at the peril of thy soul, tell it to no one else, either before or after. Unless in that one exempt case, when it is absolutely needful, to preserve the innocent. Why shouldst thou burden another as well as thyself, by making him partaker of thy sin?

3. O that all you who bear the reproach of Christ, who are in derision called Methodists, would set an example to the Christian world, so called, at least in this one instance! Put ye away evil-speaking, tale-bearing, whispering: let none of them proceed out of your mouth. See that you "speak evil of no man;" of the absent nothing but good. If you must be distinguished, whether ye will or no, let this be the distinguishing mark of a Methodist, "He censures no man behind his back: by this fruit ye may know him." What a blessed effect of this self-denial should we quickly feel in our hearts? How would our peace flow as a river, when we thus follow peace with all men? How would the love of God abound in our own souls, while we thus confirm our love to our brethren? And what an effect would it have on all that were united together in the name of the Lord Jesus? How would brotherly love continually increase, when this grand hindrance of it was removed? All the members of Christ's mystical body would then naturally care for each other? "If one member suffered, all would suffer with it;" "if one was honoured, all would rejoice with it;" and every one would love his brother.
ON EVIL-SPEAKING.

brother "with a pure heart fervently." Nor is this all: But what an effect might this have, even on the wild unthinking world? How soon would they descry in us, what they could not find among all the thousands of their brethren, and cry, (as Julian, the apostate, to his heathen courtiers,) "See how these Christians love one another!" By this chiefly would God convince the world, and prepare them also for his kingdom: as we may easily learn from those remarkable words in our Lord's last, solemn prayer. "I pray for them who will believe in me, that they may be one, as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee,—that the world may believe, that thou hast sent me!" The Lord hasten the time! The Lord enable us thus to love one another, not only "in word and in tongue, but in deed and in truth," even as Christ hath loved us.
SERMON LV.
ON THE USE OF MONEY.

LUKE XVI. 9.

"I say unto you, make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness, that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations."

Our Lord having finished the beautiful parable of the prodigal son, which he had particularly addressed to those, who murmured at his receiving publicans and sinners, adds another relation of a different kind, addressed rather to the children of God. "He said unto his disciples," (ver. 1.) not so much to the scribes and pharisees, to whom he had been speaking before—"There was a certain rich man, who had a steward, and he was accused to him of wasting his goods. And calling him, he said, Give an account of thy stewardship, for thou canst be no longer steward," (ver. 2.) After reciting the method, which the bad steward used, to provide against the day of necessity, our Saviour adds, "His Lord commended the unjust steward," namely, in this respect, That he used timely precaution, and subjoins this weighty reflection, "the children of
of this world are wiser in their generation, than the children of light," (ver. 8.) Those, who seek no other portion than this world, are wiser, (not absolutely; for they are, one and all, the veryest fools, the most egregious madmen under heaven, but in their generation, in their own way; they are more consistent with themselves, they are truer to their acknowledged principles, they more steadily pursue their end, than the children of light, than they who see the light of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ. Then follow the words above recited. And I—the only begotten Son of God, theCreator, Lord and Possessor of heaven and earth, and all that is therein; the Judge of all, to whom ye are to give an account of your stewardship, when ye can be no longer stewards; I say unto you, learn in this respect, even of the unjust steward, make yourselves friends, by wise, timely precaution, of the mammon of unrighteousness. Mammon means riches or money. It is termed the mammon of unrighteousness, because of the unrighteous manner, wherein it is frequently procured, and wherein even that, which was honestly procured, is generally employed. Make yourself friends of this by doing all possible good, particularly to the children of God, that when ye fail, when ye return to dust, when ye have no more place under the sun, those of them, who are gone before, may receive you, may welcome you into everlasting habitations.

2. An excellent branch of christian wisdom is here inculcated by our Lord on all his followers, namely, The right use of Money; a subject largely spoken of after their manner, by men of the world; but not sufficiently con-

K 3 considered
fidered by those, whom God hath chosen out of the world. These generally do not consider, as the importance of the subject requires, the use of this excellent talent. Neither do they understand how to employ it to the greatest advantage; the introduction of which into the world, is one admirable instance of the wise and gracious Providence of God. It has indeed been the manner of Poets, Orators, and Philosophers, in almost all ages and nations, to rail at this, as the grand corruptor of the world, the bane of virtue, the pest of human society. Hence nothing so commonly heard, as,

Ferrum, fermoque nocentius aurum:
And gold, more mischievous than keenest steel.
Hence the lamentable complaint,

Effodiunter opes, irritamenta malorum.
Nay, one celebrated Writer gravely exhorts his countrymen, in order to banish all vice at once, to "throw all their money into the sea."

In mare proximum,
Sumuni materiem mali!

But is not all this mere, empty rant? Is there any solid reason therein? By no means. For let the world be as corrupt as it will; is gold or silver to blame? The love of money, we know, is the root of all evil: but not the thing itself. The fault does not lie in the money, but in them that use it. It may be used ill; and what may not? But it may likewise be used well: it is full as applicable to the best, as to the worst uses. It is of unspeakable service to all civilized nations, in all the common affairs of life. It is a most compendious instrument, of trans-
THE USE OF MONEY.

acting all manner of business, and (if we use it according to christian wisdom) of doing all manner of good. It is true, were man in a state of innocence, or were all men filled with the Holy Ghost, so that, like the infant Church at Jerusalem, no man counted any thing he had his own, but distribution was made to every one as he had need; the use of it would be superseded; as we cannot conceive there is any thing of this kind, among the inhabitants of heaven. But, in the present state of mankind, it is an excellent gift of God, answering the noblest ends. In the hands of his children, it is food for the hungry, drink for the thirsty, raiment for the naked. It gives to the traveller and the stranger where to lay his head. By it we may supply the place of an husband to the widow, and of a father to the fatherless. We may be a defence for the oppressed, a means of health to the sick, of ease to them that are in pain; it may be as eyes to the blind, as feet to the lame; yea, a lifter up from the gates of death.

3. It is, therefore, of the highest concern, that all, who fear God, know how to employ this valuable talent; that they be instructed, how it may answer these glorious ends, and, in the highest degree. And perhaps all the instructions, which are necessary for this, may be reduced to three plain rules, by the exact observance whereof we may approve ourselves faithful stewards of the mammon of unrighteousness.

1. 1. The first of these is, (he that heareth, let him understand!) Gain all you can. Here we may speak like the children of the world: we meet them on their own ground. And it is gain
our bounden duty to do this: We ought to
gain all we can gain, without buying gold too
dear, without paying more for it, than it is
worth. But this it is certain we ought not to
do; we ought not to gain money at the expense
of life: nor (which is in effect the same thing)
at the expense of our health. Therefore no
gain whatsoever should induce us to enter into,
or to continue in any employ, which is of such
a kind, or is attended with so hard or so long
labour, as to impair our constitution. Neither
should we begin or continue in any business,
which necessarily deprives us of proper seasons
for food and sleep in such a proportion as our
nature requires. Indeed there is a great differ-
ence here: Some employments are absolutely
and totally unhealthy: as those which imply
the dealing much with arsenic, or other equally
hurtful minerals; or the breathing an air taint-
ed with steams of melting lead, which must at
length destroy the firmest constitution. Others
may not be absolutely unhealthy, but only to
persons of a weak constitution. Such are those
which require many hours to be spent in writing;
especially if a person write sitting, and lean
upon his stomach, or remain long in an uneafy
posture. But whatever it is which reason or
experience shews to be destructive of health or
strength, that we may not submit to; seeing the
life is more valuable than meat, and the body than
raiment. And if we are already engaged in such
an employ, we should exchange it as soon as
possible, for some, which if it lessen our gain,
will however not lessen our health.

2. We
2. We are secondly, to gain all we can, without hurting our mind any more than our body. For neither may we hurt this: we must preserve, at all events, the spirit of an healthful mind. Therefore we may not engage or continue in any sinful trade, any that is contrary to the law of God, or of our country. Such are all that necessarily imply our robbing or defrauding the king of his lawful customs. For it is at least as sinful, to defraud the king of his right, as to rob our fellow-subjects. And the king has full as much right to his customs, as we have to our houses and apparel. Other businesses there are, which however innocent in themselves, cannot be followed with innocence now: at least, not in England: such, for instance, as will not afford a competent maintenance, without cheating or lying, or conformity to some custom, which is not consistent with a good conscience. These likewise are sacredly to be avoided, whatever gain they may be attended with, provided we follow the custom of the trade. For, to gain money we must not lose our souls. There are yet others which many pursue with perfect innocence, without hurting either their body or mind. And yet perhaps you cannot either they may entangle you in that company, which would destroy your soul: and by repeated experiments it may appear, that you cannot separate the one from the other: or there may be an idiosyncrasy, a peculiarity, in your constitution of soul (as there is in the bodily constitution of many,) by reason whereof that employment is deadly to you, which another may safely follow. So I am convinced from many experiments, I could not study to any degree of perfection.
perfection, either mathematics, arithmetic, or algebra, without being a deist, if not an atheist. And yet, others may study them all their lives, without sustaining any inconvenience. None therefore can here determine for another, but every man must judge for himself, and abstain from whatever he in particular finds to be hurtful to his soul.

3. We are, thirdly, to gain all we can, without hurting our neighbour. But this we may not, cannot do, if we love our neighbour as ourselves. We cannot, if we love every one as ourselves, hurt any one in his substance. We cannot devour the increase of his lands, and perhaps the lands and houses themselves, by gaming, by overgrown bills (whether on account of physic, of law, or any thing else,) or by requiring or taking such interest, as even the laws of our country forbid. Hereby all pawn-broking is excluded: seeing whatever good we might do thereby, all unprejudiced men fee with grief to be abundantly over-balanced by the evil. And if it were otherwise, yet we are not allowed, to do evil that good may come. We cannot, consistent with brotherly love, sell our goods below the market-price. We cannot study to ruin our neighbour's trade, in order to advance our own. Much less can we entice away, or receive any of his servants or workmen whom he has need of. None can gain, by swallowing up his neighbour's substance, without gaining the damnation of hell.

4. Neither may we gain, by hurting our neighbour in his body. Therefore we may not sell any thing which tends to impair health. Such is eminently all that liquid fire, commonly called
called drams or spirituous liquors. It is true, these may have a place in medicine; they may be of use, in some bodily disorders: (although there would rarely be occasion for them, were it not for the unskilfulness of the practitioner.) Therefore such as prepare and sell them only for this end, may keep their conscience clear. But who are they? Who prepare and sell them only for this end? Do you know ten such distillers in England? Then excuse these. But all who sell them in the common way, to any that will buy, are poisoners-general. They murder his Majesty's subjects by wholesale, neither do their eye pity or spare. They drive them to hell, like sheep: And what is their gain? Is it not the blood of these men? Who then would envy their large estates and sumptuous palaces? A curse is in the midst of them: the curse of God cleaves to the stones, the timber, the furniture of them. The curse of God is in their gardens, their walks, their groves; a fire that burns to the nethermost hell. Blood, blood is there: the foundation, the floor, the walls, the roof are stained with blood! And canst thou hope, O thou man of blood, though thou art "clothed in scarlet and fine linen, and fairest sumptuously every day;" canst thou hope to deliver down the fields of blood, to the third generation? Not so; for there is a God in heaven: therefore thy name shall be rooted out. Like as those whom thou hast destroyed, body and soul, "thy memorial shall perish with thee."

5. And are not they partakers of the same guilt, though in a lower degree, whether surgeons, apothecaries, or physicians, who play with the
the lives or health of men, to enlarge their own gain? Who purposely lengthen the pain or disease, which they are able to remove speedily? Who protract the cure of their patient's body, in order to plunder his substance? Can any man be clear before God, who does not shorten every disorder, as much as he can, and remove all sickness and pain, as soon as he can? He cannot: for nothing can be more clear, than that he does not do unto others, as he would they should do unto himself.

6. This is dear-bought gain. And so is whatever is procured, by hurting our neighbour in his soul, by ministering, suppose, either directly or indirectly to his unchastity or intemperance; which certainly none can do, who has any fear of God, or any real desire of pleasing him. It nearly concerns all those to consider this, who have any thing to do with taverns, victualling-houses, opera-houses, play-houses, or any other places of public, fashionable diversion. If these profit the souls of men, you are clear; your employment is good, and your gain innocent. But if they are either sinful in themselves, or natural inlets to sin of various kinds, then it is to be feared, you have a sad account to make. O beware, lest God say in that day, "These have perished in their iniquity, but their blood do I require at thy hands!"

7. These cautions and restrictions being observed, it is the bounden duty of all, who are engaged in worldly business, to observe that first and great rule of christian wisdom, with respect to money. Gain all you can. Gain all you can by honest industry: Use all possible diligence
THE USE OF MONEY.

Diligence in your calling. Lose no time: If you understand yourself, and your relation to God and man, you know you have none to spare. If you understand your particular calling, as you ought, you will have no time that hangs upon your hands. Every business will afford some employment sufficient for every day, and every hour. That wherein you are placed, if you follow it in earnest, will leave you no leisure for silly, unprofitable diversions. You have always something better to do, something that will profit you, more or less. And "whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might." Do it as soon as possible: No delay! No putting off from day to day, or from hour to hour. Never leave any thing till to-morrow, which you can do to-day. And do it as well as possible. Do not sleep or yawn over it: Put your whole strength to the work. Spare no pains. Let nothing be done by halves, or in a slight and careless manner. Let nothing in your business be left undone, if it can be done by labour or patience.

8. Gain all you can, by common sense, by using in your business all the understanding, which God has given you. It is amazing to observe, how few do this: how men run on in the same dull track with their forefathers. But whatever they do, who know not God, this is no rule for you. It is a shame for a Christian, not to improve upon them, in whatever he takes in hand. You should be continually learning, from the experience of others, or from your own experience, reading, and reflection, to do every thing you have to do.
better to-day, than you did yesterday. And see that you practice whatever you learn, that you may make the best of all that is in your hands.

II. 1. Having gained all you can, by honest wisdom, and unwearied diligence, the second rule of Christian prudence is, Save all you can. Do not throw the precious talent into the sea: leave that folly to heathen philosophers. Do not throw it away in idle expences, which is just the same as throwing it into the sea. Expend no part of it merely to gratify the desire of the flesh, the desire of the eye, or the pride of life.

2. Do not waste any part of so precious a talent, merely in gratifying the desires of the flesh; in procuring the pleasures of sense of whatever kind; particularly, in enlarging the pleasure of tasting. I do not mean, avoid gluttony and drunkenness only: an honest heathen would condemn these. But there is a regular, reputable, kind of sensuality, an elegant epicurism, which does not immediately disorder the stomach, nor (sensibly at least) impair the understanding. And yet (to mention no other effects of it now) it cannot be maintained without considerable expence. Cut off all this expence: Despise delicacy and variety, and be content with what plain nature requires.

3. Do not waste any part of so precious a talent, merely in gratifying the desire of the eye, by superfluous and expensive apparel, or by needless ornaments. Waste no part of it in curiously adorning your houses, in superfluous or expensive furniture: in costly pictures, painting,
painting, gilding, books: In elegant (rather than useful) gardens. Let your neighbours, who know nothing better, do this: "Let the dead bury their dead." But "what is that to thee," says our Lord? "Follow thou me." Are you willing? Then you are able so to do.

4. Lay out nothing to gratify the pride of life, to gain the admiration or praise of men. This motive of expense is frequently interwoven with one or both of the former. Men are expensive in diet, or apparel, or furniture, not barely to please their appetite, or to gratify their eye, their imagination, but their vanity too." "So long as thou dost well unto thyself, men will speak good of thee." So long as thou art "clothed in purple and fine linen, and farest sumptuously every day," no doubt many will applaud thy elegance of taste, thy generosity and hospitality. But do not buy their applause so dear. Rather be content with the honour that cometh from God.

5. Who would expend any thing in gratifying these desires, if he considered, that to gratify them is to increase them. Nothing can be more certain than this: daily experience shews, the more they are indulged, they increase the more. Whenever therefore you expend any thing to please your taste or other senses, you pay so much for sensuality. When you lay out money to please your eye, you give so much for an increase of curiosity, for a stronger attachment to these pleasures which perish in the using. While you are purchasing any thing which men use to applaud, you are purchasing more vanity. Had you not then enough of vanity, sensuality, curiosity, before?
SERMON LV.

Was there need of any addition? And would you pay for it too? What manner of wisdom is this? Would not the literally throwing your money into the sea, be a less mischievous folly?

6. And why should you throw away money upon your children, any more than upon yourself, in delicate food, in gay or costly apparel, in superfluities of any kind? Why should you purchase for them, more pride or lust, more vanity, or foolish and hurtful desires? They do not want any more: they have enough already: Nature has made ample provision for them. Why should you be at farther expence, to increase their temptations and snares, and to pierce them through with many sorrows?

7. Do not leave it to them, to throw away. If you have good reason to believe, they would waste what is now in your possession, in gratifying and thereby increasing the desire of the flesh, the desire of the eye, or the pride of life; at the peril of theirs and your own soul, do not set these traps in their way. Do no offer your sons or your daughters unto Belial, any more than unto Moloch. Have pity upon them, and remove out of their way, what you may easily foresee, would increase their sins, and consequent ly plunge them deeper into everlasting perdition. How amazing then is the infatuation of those parents, who think they can never leave their children enough. What cannot you leave them enough of arrows, firebrands and death? Not enough of foolish and hurtful desires? Not enough of pride, lust, ambition, vanity? Not enough of everlasting burnings? Poor wretch!
Thou fearest where no fear is. Surely both thou and they, when ye are lifting up your eyes in hell, will have enough both of "the worm that never dieth, and of the fire that never shall be quenched!"

8. "What then would you do, if you was in my case? If you had a considerable fortune to leave?" Whether I would do it, or no, I know what I ought to do: This will admit of no reasonable question. If I had one child, elder or younger, who knew the value of money, one who I believed would put it to the true use, I should think it my absolute, indispensible duty, to leave that child the bulk of my fortune; and to the rest just so much as would enable them to live in the manner they had been accustomed to do. "But what if all your children were equally ignorant of the true use of money?" I ought then (Hard Saying! Who can hear it?) to give each what would keep him above want: and to bestow all the rest in such a manner as I judged would be most for the glory of God.

III. 1. But let not any man imagine, that he has done any thing barely by going thus far, by gaining and saving all he can, if he were to stop here. All this is nothing, if a man go not forward, if he does not point all this at a further end. Nor indeed can a man properly be said, to save any thing, if he only lays it up. You may as well throw your money into the sea as bury it in the earth. And you may as well bury it in the earth, as in your chest, or in the Bank of England. Not to use, is effectually to throw it away. If therefore you would indeed make yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness,
nefs, add the third rule to the two preceding. Having first gained all you can, and secondly saved all you can, then give all you can.

2. In order to see the ground and reason of this, consider, When the Possessor of heaven and earth brought you into being, and placed you in this world, he placed you here not as a proprietor, but a steward. As such he intrusted you for a season with goods of various kinds. But the sole property of these still rests in him, nor can ever be alienated from him. As you yourself are not your own, but his, such is likewise all that you enjoy. Such is your soul and your body, not your own, but God's. And so is your substance in particular. And he has told you in the most clear and express terms, how you are to employ it for him, in such a manner, that it may be all an holy sacrifice, acceptable thro' Christ Jesus. And this light easy service, he hath promised to reward with an eternal weight of glory.

3. The direction which God hath given us, touching the use of our worldly substance, may be comprised in the following particulars. If you desire to be a faithful and a wise steward, out of that portion of your Lord's goods, which he has for the present lodged in your hands, but with the right of resuming, whenever it pleases him: First, provide things needful for yourself, food to eat, raiment to put on, whatever nature moderately requires, for preserving the body in health and strength: Secondly, provide these for your wife, your children, your servants, or any others, who pertain to your household. If, when this is done, there be an overplus left, then "do good to them that are of the
the household of faith. If there be an overplus still, "as you have opportunity, do good unto all men." In so doing, you give all you can; nay, in a sound sense, all you have: for all that is laid out in this manner, is really given to God. You "render unto God the things that are God's," not only by what you give to the poor, but also by that, which you expend in providing things needful for yourself and your household.

4. If then a doubt should at any time arise in your mind, concerning what you are going to expend, either on yourself or any part of your family, you have an easy way to remove it. Calmly and seriously enquire, 1. In expending this, am I acting according to my character? Am I acting herein, not as a proprietor, but as a steward of my Lord's goods? 2. Am I doing this in obedience to his word? In what scripture does he require me so to do? 3. Can I offer up this action, this expense, as a sacrifice to God through Jesus Christ? 4. Have I reason to believe, that for this very work I shall have a reward at the resurrection of the just? You will seldom need any thing more to remove any doubt, which arises on this head; but by this fourfold consideration, you will receive clear light as to the way wherein you should go.

5. If any doubt still remain, you may farther examine yourself by prayer, according to those heads of enquiry. Try whether you can say to the Searcher of hearts, your conscience not condemning you, "Lord, thou seest, I am going to expend this sum, on that food, apparel, furniture. And thou knowest, I act therein with
with a single eye, as a steward of thy goods, expending this portion of them thus, in pursuance of the design thou hadst in intrusting me with them. Thou knowest I do this in obedience to thy word, as thou commandest, and because thou commandest it. Let this, I beseech thee, be an holy sacrifice, acceptable through Jesus Christ! And give me a witness in myself, that for this labour of love I shall have a recompence, when thou rewardest every man according to his works.” Now if your conscience bear you witness in the Holy Ghost, that this prayer is well-pleasing to God, then have you no reason to doubt, but that expence is right and good, and such as will never make you ashamed.

6. You see then what it is, to make yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness, and by what means you may procure, that when ye fail they may receive you into everlasting habitations. You see the nature and extent of true christian prudence, so far as it relates to the use of that great talent, Money. Gain all you can, without hurting either yourself or your neighbour, in soul or body; by applying hereto with uninterrupted diligence, and with all the understanding which God has given you. Save all you can, by cutting off every expence, which serves only to indulge foolish desire: to gratify either the desire of the flesh, the desire of the eye, or the pride of life. Waste nothing, living or dying, on sin or folly, whether for yourself or your children. And then give all you can, or in other words, give all you have to God. Do not flint yourself, like a Jew rather than a Christian, to this or that propor-
THE USE OF MONEY.

129

proportion. Render unto God, not a tenth, not a third, not half; but all that is God's, be it more or less: By employing all, on yourself, your household, the household of faith, and all mankind, in such a manner, that you may give a good account of your stewardship, when ye can be no longer stewards: In such a manner as the oracles of God direct, both by general and particular precepts: In such a manner, that whatever ye do may be a sacrifice of a sweet smelling favour to God; and that every act may be rewarded in that day, when the Lord cometh with all his saints.

7. Brethren, can we be either wise or faithful stewards, unless we thus manage our Lord's goods? We cannot, as not only the Oracles of God, but our own conscience beareth witness. Then why should we delay? Why should we confer any longer with flesh and blood, or men of the world? Our kingdom, our wisdom is not of this world: Heathen custom is nothing to us. We follow no men any farther than they are followers of Christ. Hear ye him: yea, to-day, while it is called to-day, hear and obey his voice. At this hour and from this hour, do his will: Fulfil his word, in this and in all things. I entreat you, in the name of the Lord Jesus, act up to the dignity of your calling. No more sloth! Whatsoever your hand findeth to do, do it with your might. No more waste! Cut off every expense which fashion, caprice, or flesh and blood demand. No more covetousness! But employ whatever God has entrusted you with, in doing good, all possible good, and in every possible kind and degree, to the household.
houhhold of faith, to all men. This is no small part of the wisdom of the just: Give all ye have, as well as all ye are, a spiritual sacrifice to him; who with-held not from you his Son, his only Son: So laying up in store for yourselves a good foundation against the time to come, that ye may attain eternal life.
ADVICE

To the PEOPLE called METHODISTS,

WITH REGARD TO

DRESS.

I. I. I AM not fond of saying the same thing over and over; especially when I have so many things to say, that the day of life (which with me is far spent) is not likely to suffice for them. But in some cases, it is needful for you that I should: and then it is not grievous to me. And it may be best to speak freely and fully at once, that there may be the less need of speaking on this head hereafter.

2. When we look into the Bible with any attention, and then look round into the world, to see who believes, and who lives according to this book; we may easily discern, that the system of practice, as well as the system of truth there delivered, is torn in pieces, and scattered abroad, like the members of Absyrtus. Every denomination of Christians retains some part either of Christian truth or practice: these hold fast one part, and those another, as their fathers did before them. What is the duty, meantime, of
ADVICE TO METHODISTS,

of those, who desire to follow the whole Word of God? Undoubtedly to gather up all these fragments, that if possible, nothing be lost: with all diligence to follow all those we see about us, so far as they follow the Bible: and to join together in one scheme of truth and practice, what almost all the world put asunder.

3. Many years ago, I observed several parts of christian practice, among the people called Quakers. Two things I particularly remarked among them, plainness of speech, and plainness of dress. I willingly adopted both, with some restrictions, and particularly plainness of dress: The same I recommended to you, when God first called you out of the world: and after the addition of more than twenty years experience, I recommend it to you still.

4. But before I go any farther, I must entreat you, in the name of God, be open to conviction. Whatever prejudices you have contracted from education, custom, or example, divest yourselves of them, as far as possible. Be willing to receive light either from God or man: Do not shut your eyes against it. Rather be glad to see more than you did before, to have the eyes of your understanding opened. Receive the truth in the love thereof, and you will have reason to bless God for ever.

II. 1. Not that I would advise you, to imitate the people called Quakers, in those little particularities of dress, which can answer no possible end, but to distinguish them from all other people. To be singular, merely for singularity’s sake, is not the part of a Christian. I do not therefore advise you, to wear a hat of such dimen-
WITH REGARD TO DRESS.

133

dimensions, or a coat of a particular form. Rather, in things that are absolutely indifferent, that are of no consequence at all, humility and courtefy require you to conform to the customs of your country.

2. But I advise you to imitate them, first, in the neatness of their apparel. This is highly to be commended, and quite suitable to your christian calling. Let all your apparel therefore be as clean, as your situation in life will allow. It is certain, the poor cannot be as clean as they would, as having little change of raiment. But let even these be as clean as they can, as care and diligence can keep them. Indeed they have particular need so to be; because cleanliness is one great branch of frugality. It is likewise more conducive to health, than is generally considered. Let the poor then especially labour to be clean, and provoke those of higher rank to jealousy.

3. I advise you to imitate them, secondly, in the plainness of their apparel. In this are implied two things; 1. That your apparel be cheap, not expensive; far cheaper than others in your circumstances wear, or than you would wear if you knew not God; 2. That it be grave, not gay, airy, or showy: not in the point of the fashion. And these easy rules may be applied both to the materials, whereof it is made, and the manner wherein it is made or put on.

4. Would you have a farther rule with respect to both? Then take one, which you may always carry in your bosom: "Do every thing herein with a single eye;" and this will direct you in every circumstance. Let a single in-
ADVICE TO METHODISTS.

tention to please, God prescribe, both what clothing you shall buy, and the manner where-in it shall be made, and how you shall put on and wear it. To express the same thing in other words; let all you do in this respect, be so done, that you may offer it to God, a sacrifice acceptable through Christ Jesus: so that, consequently, it may increase your reward, and brighten your crown in heaven. And so it will do, if it be agreeable to christian humility, seriousness and charity.

5. Shall I be more particular still? Then I exhort all those who desire me to watch over their souls, Wear no gold, (whatever officers of state may do; or magistrates, as the ensign of their office;) no pearls, or precious stones: Use no curling of hair, or costly apparel, how grave, soever. I advise those, who are able to receive this saying, Buy no velvets, no silks, no fine linen, no superfluities, no mere ornaments, tho' ever so much in fashion. Wear nothing, though you have it already, which is of a glaring colour, or which is in any kind gay, glittering, showy; nothing made in the very height of the fashion; nothing apt to attract the eyes of the by-standers. I do not advise women to wear rings, ear-rings, neck-laces, lace, (of whatever kind or colour,) or ruffles, which by little and little may shoot easily out from one to twelve inches deep. Neither do I advise men, to wear coloured waistcoats, shining stockings, glittering or costly buckles or buttons, either on their coats, or in their sleeves, any more than gay, fashionable, or expensive perukes. It is true, these are little, very little things; therefore they are not worth defending; therefore
give them up, let them drop, throw them away without another word. Else a little needle may cause much pain in your flesh, a little self-indulgence much hurt to your soul.

III. i. For the preceding exhortation I have the authority of God in clear and express terms. *"I will, that women," (and by parity of reason men too,) "adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety, not broidered (curled) hair, or gold, or pearls," (one kind of precious stones, which was then most in use, put for all,) "or costly apparel, but, (which becometh women professing godliness,) with good works." Again, † "Whole adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaunting (curling) the hair, and of wearing of gold or of putting on apparel. But let it be—the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God, of great price." Nothing can be more express: The wearing of gold, of precious stones, and of costly apparel, together with curling of hair, is here forbidden by name: nor is there any restriction made, either here, or in any other scripture. Whoever therefore says, "There is no harm in these things," may as well say, "There is no harm in stealing or adultery!"

2. There is something peculiarly observable in the manner, wherein both St. Peter and St. Paul speak of these things. "Let not your adorning (says St. Peter) be that outward adorning; but let it be the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit." The latter clause is not added

* i Thm. ii. 9, † i. Pet. iii. 3, 4.
barely to fill up the sentence, but with strong
and weighty reason. For there is a direct con-
trariety, (as little as we may suspect it,) between
that outward, and this inward adorning: and
that, both with regard to their source, and with
regard to their tendency. As to their source,
all that adorning springs from nature; a meek
and quiet spirit from grace: The former, from
conforming to our own will, and the will of
man; the latter from conformity to the will of
God. And as to their tendency, nothing more
directly tends to destroy meekness and quietness
of spirit than all that outward adorning, where-
by we seek to commend ourselves to men, and
not to God. For this cherishes all those passions
and tempers, which overthrow the quiet of every
soul wherein they dwell.

3. Let them "adorn themselves, (faith St.
Paul), not with curling of hair, or with gold,
pearls, or costly apparel, but, (which becometh
women professing godliness,) with good works."
The latter clause is here likewise added for
plain and weighty reasons. For 1. That kind
of adorning cannot spring from godliness, from
either the love or fear of God, from a desire of
conforming to his will, or from the mind which
was in Christ Jesus. 2. It no way tends to in-
crease godliness: it is not conducive to any holy
temper. But 3. It manifestly tends to destroy
several of the tempers most essential to godli-
ness. It has no friendly influence on humility;
whether we aim at pleasing others or ourselves
hereby. Either in one case or the other, it will
rather increase pride or vanity, than lowliness of
heart. It does not at all minister to the
seriousness, which becomes a sinner born to die.
It is utterly inconsistent with simplicity: no one uses it merely to please God. Whoever acts with a single eye, does all things to be seen and approved of God; and can no more dress than he can pray, or give alms, to be seen of men.

4. "O but one may be as humble in velvet and embroidery, as another is in sackcloth." True: for a person may wear sackcloth, and have no humility at all. The heart may be filled with pride and vanity, whatever the raiment be. Again; women, under the yoke of unbelieving parents or husbands, as well as men in office, may, on several occasions, be constrained to put on gold, or costly apparel. And in cases of this kind, plain experience shews, that the baleful influence of it is suspended. So that, wherever it is not our choice, but our cross, it may consist with godliness, with a meek and quiet spirit, with lowliness of heart, with christian seriousness. But it is not true, that any one can choose this from a single eye to please God; or, consequently, without sustaining great loss, as to lowliness and every other christian temper.

5. But however this be, Can you be adorned at the same time with costly apparel, and with good works? That is, in the same degree as you might have been, had you bestowed less cost on your apparel? You know this is impossible: The more you expend on the one, the less you have to expend on the other. Costliness of apparel, in every branch, is therefore immediately, directly, inevitably destructive of good works. You see a brother, for whom Christ died, ready to perish for want of needful clothing.
ADVICE TO METHODISTS,

clothing. You would give it him gladly: But alas! It is corban, whereby he might have been profited. It is given already, not indeed for the service of God, not to the treasury of the temple; but either to please the folly of others, or to feed vanity, or the lust of the eye in yourself. Now, (even suppose these were harmless tempers, yet) what an unspeakable loss is this, if it be really true, that every man shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour! If there is indeed a reward in heaven for every work of faith, for every degree of the labour of love!

2dly, 1. As to the advice subjoined, it is easy to observe, that all those smaller things are, in their degree, liable to the same objections as the greater. If they are gay, showy, pleasing to the eye, the putting them on does not spring from a single view to please God. It neither flows from, nor tends to advance a meek and quiet spirit. It does not arise from, nor any way promote real, vital godliness.

2. And if they are in any wise costly, if they are purchased with any unnecessary expense, they cannot but (in proportion to that expense,) be destructive of good works. Of consequence, they are destructive of that charity, which is fed thereby; hardening our heart against the cry of the poor and needy, by inuring us to shut up our bowels of compassion toward them.

3. At least, all unnecessary expences of this kind, whether small or great, are senseless and foolish. This we may defy any man living to get over, if he allows there is another world. For there is no reward in heaven for laying out your money in ornaments, or costly apparel: whereas
whereas you may have an eternal reward, for
whatever you expend on earth.

4. Consider this more closely. Here are two
ways proposed of laying out such a sum of mo-
ney. I may lay it out in expensive apparel for
myself, or in necessary clothing for my neigh-
bour. The former will please my own eye, or
that of others: the latter will please God.
Now suppose there were no more harm in one
than in the other, in that which pleases man,
than in that which pleases God: is there as
much good in it? If they are equally innocent,
are they equally wise? By the one, I gratify the
desire of the eye, and gain a pleasure that
perishes in the using: By the other, I gain a
larger share of those pleasures that are at God's
right hand for evermore. By the former I ob-
tain the applause of man; by the latter, the
praise of God. In this way, I meet with the
admiration of fools: In that, I hear from the
Judge of all, "Well done, good and faithful
servant! Enter thou into the joy of thy Lord."

5. Brethren, whatever ye are accounted by
men, I would not have you fools in God's ac-
count. "Walk ye circumspectly, not as fools,
but as wise;" not in those ways which God may
possibly forgive, (to put things in the most favour-
able light;) but in those which he will certainly
reward. In wickedness be ye children still; but
in understanding, be ye men. I want to see a
visible body of people, who are a standing ex-
ample of this wisdom; a pattern of doing all
things, great and small, with an eye to God and
eternity.

IV. 1. But we may be assured, the wisdom
of the world will find out abundance of objec-
tions
ADVICE TO METHODISTS,
tions to this. Accordingly it is objected, first, "If God has given us plentiful fortunes, if we are placed in the higher ranks of life, we must act suitable to our fortune. We ought then to dress according to our rank, that is, in gold and costly apparel." Not to inhit, that none of you are of this rank, I answer, Where is this written? Our Saviour once occasionally said, "Behold, they who wear gorgeous (splendid) apparel are in king's courts:" but he does not say, they ought to be even there: he neither enjoins, nor countenances it. And where is this either enjoined or allowed by him or any of his Apostles? Bring me plain, scriptural proof for your assertion, or I cannot allow it.

2. "But did not God give express command by Moses, that some even among his chosen people should be adorned in the most exquisite manner, with gold and precious stones and costly array?" Indeed he did: he expressly commanded this with regard to Aaron, and his successors in the High-priesthood. But to this I answer first, this direction which God gave, with regard to the Jewish High-priest, can certainly affect no person in England, unless the Archbishop of Canterbury. And I apprehend, he does not plead the precedent. Secondly, the Jews and we are under different dispensations. The glory of the whole Mosaic dispensation was chiefly visible and external: Whereas the glory of the Christian dispensation is of an invisible and spiritual nature.

3. "But what then are gold and precious stones for? Why have they a place in the creation?" What if I say, I cannot tell? There are abundance of things in the creation, which I do not know the use of. What are cro-

...
codiles, lions, tigers, scorpions for? Why have so many poisons a place in the creation? Some of them are for medicine: but whatever they are for, in whatever manner they may be useful, they are certainly not to be used in such a manner as God has expressly forbidden.

4. "But if they were not thus adorned, Kings and Generals would be despised by their subjects and soldiers." Supposing they would, that is nothing to you; for you are neither Kings nor Generals. But it is absolutely certain, they would not, if they were not despised on other accounts. If they are valiant and wise, they will never be despised for the plainness of their dress. Was ever General or King more esteemed or beloved by his subjects and soldiers, than King Charles of Sweden? And it is sure, he wore no gold or costly apparel, not so much as a common officer. But we need not go so many years back. Who is the Prince that is now honoured and beloved both by his subjects and soldiers, far beyond any other King or General in Europe? There is no need to repeat his name. But does he gain this honour and love by the costliness of his apparel? So far from it, that he rarely uses any other dress, than the uniform of his own guards.

5. "But if all men were to dress like him, how would tradesmen live?" I answer, 1. God certainly considered this, before ever he gave these commands. And he would never have given them, had he not seen, that if they were universally observed, men in general would live better than they otherwise could; better in this world, as well as that to come. But, 2. There is
ADVICE TO METHODISTS,
is no danger at all, that they should be universally observed. Only a little flock in any civilized nation will observe them, till the knowledge of God covers the earth. 3. If those who do observe them, employ the money they thus save in the most excellent manner, then a part of what before only served to fat a few rich tradesmen for hell, will suffice to feed and clothe and employ many poor, that seek the kingdom of heaven. 4. And how will those tradesmen themselves live? They will live like men, by honest labour, most of whom before lived like swine, wallowing in all gluttony and sensuality. But, 5. This is all mere trifling. It is only a copy of your countenance. For it is not this, it is not a regard to trade, or the good of the nation, that makes you disobey God. No: it is pride, vanity, or some other sinful temper, which is the real cause of these sinful actions.

6. "But we cannot carry on our own trade without dressing like other people." If you mean only conforming to those customs of your country, that are neither gay nor costly, why should you not "dress like other people?" I really think you should. Let an Englishman dress like other Englishmen; not like a Turk or a Tartar. Let an English woman dress like other English women; not like a French woman or a German. But if you mean "conformity to them in what God has forbidden," the answer is ready at hand. If you cannot carry on your trade, without breaking God's command, you must not carry it on. But I doubt the fact: I know no trade which may not be carried on by one who uses plan and modest
WITH REGARD TO DRESS. 143

modest apparel. I fear therefore, this too is but a copy of your countenance: You love these things, and therefore think them necessary. Your heart carries away your judgment: If you were not fond of them, you would never dream of their necessity.

7. In one single case these things may be necessary, that is, unavoidable, namely, that of women who are under the yoke of self-willed, unreasonable husbands or parents. Such may be constrained to do in some degree, what otherwise they would not. And they are blameless herein, if 1. They use all possible means, arguments, intreaties, to be excused from it; and when they cannot prevail, 2. Do it just so far as they are constrained, and no farther.

V. 1. And now brethren, what remains, but that I beseech you, who are not under the yoke, who are under God, the directors of your own actions, to set prejudices, obstinacy, fashion aside; and to yield to scripture, to reason, to truth. Suppose, as some affirm, you acted on no higher motive than to please me herein, I know not that you would have need to be ashamed; even this you might avow in the face of the sun. You owe something to me: perhaps it is not my fault, if you owe not your own souls also. If then you did an indifferent thing only on this principle, not to give me any uneasiness, but to oblige, to comfort me in my labour, would you do much amiss? How much more may you be excused in doing what I advise, when truth, reason and scripture advise the same? When the thing in question is not an indifferent thing, but clearly determined by God himself?

2. Some
2. Some years ago, when I first landed at Savannah in Georgia, a gentlewoman told me, "I assure you, Sir, you will see as well-drest a congregation on Sunday, as most you have seen in London." I did so: and soon after I took occasion to expound those scriptures which relate to dressing, and to press them freely upon my audience, in a plain and close application. All the time that I afterward ministered at Savannah, I saw neither gold in the church, nor costly apparel. But the congregation in general was almost constantly clothed in plain, clean linen or woollen.

3. And why should not my advice, grounded on scripture and reason, weigh with you as much as with them? I will tell you why, 1. You are surrounded with saints of the world, persons fashionably, reputedly religious. And these are constant opposers of all, who would go farther in religion than themselves. These are continually warning you against running into extremes, and striving to beguile you from the simplicity of the gospel. 2. You have near you still more dangerous enemies than these, An¬nomians, whether German or English; who when any christian practice is enforced, come with the cuckoo's note, "the law, the law;" and while they themselves glory in their shame, make you ashamed of what should be your glory. 3. You have suffered by false teachers of our own, who undermined the doctrine you had received: negatively, in public, by not in¬fiting upon it, by not exhorting you to dress as persons professing godliness; (and, not to speak for a christian duty, is in effect to speak against it:) and positively in private, either by jesting upon
upon your exactness in observing the scripture-rule, or by insinuations, which if you did not mind then, yet would afterward weaken your soul.

4. You have been, and are at this day, in perils among false brethren: I mean, not only those of other congregations, who count strictness all one with bondage: But many of our own; in particular those, who were once clearly convinced of the truth: but they have sinned away that conviction themselves, and now endeavour to harden others against it: at least, by example; by returning again to the folly, from which they were once clean escaped. But what is the example of all mankind, when it runs counter to scripture and reason? I have warned you a thousand times not to regard any example, which contradicts reason or scripture. If it ever should be (pray that it may not be, but if it ever should) that I or my brother, my wife, or his, or all of us together, should set an example contrary to scripture and reason; I entreat you, regard it not at all; still let scripture and reason prevail.

5. You who have passed the morning, perhaps the noon of life, who find the shadows of the evening approach, set a better example to those that are to come, to the now-rising generation. With you the day of life is far spent; the night of death is at hand. You have no time to lose: see that you redeem every moment that remains. Remove every thing out of the way, be it ever so small (though indeed gay or costly apparel is not so) that might any ways obstruct your lowliness and meekness, your
SERIOUSNESS of spirit, your single intention to glorify God, in all your thoughts and words and actions. Let no needless expense hinder your being in the highest degree you possibly can, rich in good works. Ready to distribute, willing to communicate, till you are clothed with glory and immortality.

Our carcases will soon fall into the dust; then let the survivors adorn them with flowers. Meantime let us regard those ornaments only, that will accompany us into eternity.

6. You that are in the morning of your days, either your form is agreeable, or it is not. If it is not, do not make your person remarkable; rather let it lie hid in common apparel. On every account, it is your wisdom to recommend yourself to the eye of the mind; but especially to the eye of God, who reads the secrets of your hearts, and in whose sight the incorruptible ornaments alone are of great price. But if you would recommend yourself by dress, is any thing comparable to plain neatness? What kind of persons are those, to whom you could be recommended by gay or costly apparel? None that are any way likely to make you happy: This pleases only the silliest and worst of men. At most, it gratifies only the silliest and worst principle in those who are of a nobler character.

7. To you whom God has intrusted with a more pleasing form, those ornaments are quite needless,—

"The' adorning thee with so much art
Is but a barbarous skill:
'Tis like the poisoning of a dart,
Too apt before to kill."

That
That is, to express ourselves in plain English, without any figure of poetry, it only tends to drag them faster into death everlasting, who were going fast enough before, by additional provocations to lust, or at least, inordinate affection. Did you actually design to raise either of these, in those who looked upon you? What! while you and they were in the more immediate presence of God! What profaneness and inhumanity mixt together! But if you designed it not, did you not foresee it? You might have done so without any extraordinary sagacity. "Nay, I did not care or think about it." And do you say this by way of excuse? You scatter abroad arrows, firebrands and death; and do not care or think about it!

8 O let us all walk more charitably and more wisely for the time to come! Let us all cast aside from this very hour, whatever does not become men and women professing godliness: whatever does not spring from the love and fear of God, and minister thereto. Let our seriousness shine before men, not our dress: let all who see us know that we are not of this world. Let our adorning be that which fadeth not away, even righteousness and true holiness. If ye regard not weakening my hands and grieving my spirit, yet grieve not the Holy Spirit of God. Do you ask, "But what shall I do with the gay or costly apparel, and with the ornaments I have already? Must I suffer them to be lost? Ought I not to wear them now I have them?" I answer, there is no loss like that of using them; wearing them is the greatest loss of all. But what then shalt thou...
do with them? Burn them rather than wear them; throw them into the depth of the sea. Or if thou canst with a clear conscience, sell them, and give the money to them that want. But buy no more at the peril of thy soul. Now be a faithful steward. After providing for those of thine own household things needful for life and godliness, feed the hungry, clothe the naked, relieve the sick, the prisoner, the stranger, with all that thou hast. Then shall God clothe thee with glory and honour in the presence of men and angels: and thou shalt shine as the brightness of the firmament, yea, as the stars for ever and ever.
THE

DUTIES

OF

HUSBANDS AND WIVES.

I am persuaded, it is not possible for me to write any thing so full, so strong, and so clear on this subject, as has been written near an hundred and fifty years ago, by a person of equal sense and piety. I shall therefore only abridge what he has written on the head, with some few alterations and additions. I beseech you all, who are more immediately concerned, to read it with the calmest attention, and with earnest prayer. That what is here written, may be transcribed into your hearts and lives.

N 3  CHAP.
THE DUTIES

CHAP. I.

The first Duty of the married,—Chastity.

1. **This Duty is so manifest, that no person whatever can pretend ignorance of it.** The law of God, the law of nature, and the laws of all well ordered societies enjoin it. The violation of this unties the marriage knot, and dissolves the marriage-covenant. For our Lord himself, who utterly disallows of other divorces, yet allows divorce in case of adultery. "But may the person wronged admit the wrong-doer again, after the offence is known?" I answer, They may, provided the offender give full, satisfactory proof of amendment. We read not any command to the contrary. But if the offender persist in sin, then the innocent person, having full proof thereof, is bound to withdraw from the sinner.

2. **Let any, who find strong temptations to this sin,** 1. Constantly and conscientiously perform private duties. The blessing of God hereon will make him conqueror, over what before seemed most unconquerable. 2. Be diligent in your calling, that you may have no leisure for inflaming imaginations. It is certain, an idle person, if occasion and constitution serve, will sooner or later prove adulterous. But diligence joined with hearty prayer, will preserve a man pure and undefiled.

3. **Be exactly temperate.** It is easy to put out the fiercest fire, by withdrawing the fuel. If therefore you would be chaste in your marriage, be sparing in your food. 4. Carefully shun every temptation, and all opportunities
tunities of sin; especially, shun as a rock the company of any person apt to tempt, or to be tempted: and consider, that the coldest water will be hot, if it be set near the fire.

3. These directions are such, as agree to all, married or unmarried. There remains another help peculiar to the former, the due use of marriage. The ordinances of God will answer their end, if our abuse of them do not hinder. Now God has ordained marriage for this end, among others, to prevent fornication. Wherefore let it be used in the manner it ought, and it will surely answer its end. And in this respect, "the wife hath not power over her own body, but the husband." Neither "hath the husband power over his own body, but the wife." It is not the choice of either, whether to live with the other, or not. But they are bound in conscience so to do, and cannot refuse it without grievous sin. There may indeed be a separation for a time if needful affairs require. But it is not lawful for either the man or the woman to leave the other totally or finally.

4. In this their society, two things are to be observed, that it be sanctified and temperate. First, It must be sanctified, that is, made lawful and holy to them, by the word of God and prayer. The word of God clearly shews the lawfulness of it. For God has said expressly, "Marriage is honourable among all men, and the bed undefiled." But let it also be sanctified, or made holy by prayer. Solemnly pray for the blessing of God upon his ordinance, not forgetting to return him particular thanks for his infinite goodness herein. That this is requisite, none can deny, that will not deny the authority
authority of St. Paul. For he affirms, that marriage, as well as meat and drink, is sanctified by prayer and thanksgiving. As therefore it is a brutish profaneness, for any man to sit down to his table, as an horse to the manger, without asking the blessing of God first, and to return from it, as a fox from his prey, without praising him that gave him food and appetite; so it is great licentiousness for married persons to come together, as it were brute beasts, without either prayer or thanksgiving.

The hope of posterity, the stay of old age, the support of every man's house, the supply of the Church and Common-wealth, hang upon the fruit of marriage. Is it then more than needs, to ask the blessing of God in a thing of so great importance? Surely we should bring his curse upon us, were we either to forget it as needless, or despise it as ridiculous. Yea, whereas marriage is instituted in part, for the subduing inordinate desires, it cannot answer that end, without God's blessing: which how can we expect, if we scorn to ask it? Certainly, the men that use marriage in a brutish manner, not seeing God therein, nor sanctifying it to themselves by these means, will thereby become more and more brutish. Wherefore let no man scoff at a duty plainly commanded by God: But let us learn to know the full efficacy of prayer, and to reap the fruit of it in all things.

5. It must, secondly, be temperate. We are always to remember, God ordained marriage chiefly for the increase of mankind, and not to kindle lustful desires, but to quench them. I confess, we should take great heed of laying snares
snare upon men's consciences, and must be very careful not to bind them, where God has not bound them. But this is a sure rule: The quantity of every thing must be suited to the end. This being considered, the married are not to provoke desires, but allay them, when they provoke themselves. They must not strive to inflame the passions, when they are cool, but when they are moved of themselves, to assuage them. In a word, marriage should be used as sparingly, as consists with the need of the persons married. A temperate use promotes purity: excess inflames lust, and inclines to adultery. Wherefore the foregoing rule should be carefully observed; that the married come no oftener together, than is needful to extinguish natural desires, when they would otherwise become troublesome to them. Now the sanctified use of marriage is also an help to the temperate use of it. But they seldom fail to exceed, who do not take care to make all things holy by prayer and thanksgiving.

6. Perhaps one might add, It should ever be accompanied with carefulness and willingness. They must neither deny themselves to each other, nor behave with grudging frowardness; but rather with readiness, and all demonstrations of sincere affection. The Scripture plainly testifies this, by the very term, benevolence or good-will. For no man can call that good-will, which is done churlishly and discontentedly: a behaviour that naturally tends to alienate the heart, and create suspicions of estrangement of affection.

CHAP.
54

The Duties

Chap. II.

Of the Love of Married Persons.

1. The marriage-covenant binds all, that enter into it, to several other duties, as well as to chastity; but not under the same forfeiture. Failing in these breaks God's command, but does not break the bond of matrimony. No ill behaviour dissolves this, while we are not wronged, as to the marriage-bed. Thou art still an husband or a wife, though thy yoke-fellow is wanting in many duties. Be careful therefore to do thy own part still, however slenderly thou art requited.

2. The duties common to husbands and wives partly respect themselves, and partly their families. All the former sort may be reduced to two heads, love, and the fruits of love. First, Love: Their hearts must be united, as well as their hands; else their union will be more troublesome, than can be imagined. Love is the life and soul of marriage, without which it differs from itself, as a carcase from a living body. This makes all things easy; whereas the absence of it makes all things hard. Love seasons and sweetens every state; love composes all controversies. In whomsoever love prevails, to them only marriage is what it should be, a pleasing combination of two persons into one home, one purse, one heart, and one flesh. And this love must have two especial properties: first, it must be spiritual; secondly, matrimonial. It must be spiritual in its ground, and in its working. Its chief ground must be the commandment of God. A christian must love his
his wife, not only because she is beautiful or loving, but chiefly because God enjoins it. The wife must love her husband, not only because he is handsome, kind, or well-behaved, but because God, the Sovereign of all souls, has commanded women to be "lovers of their own husbands." Not the face, portion, or good qualities of the married must be the chief cause of their loving each other; but the will of God; and that affection, which stands on this stable foundation, will be lasting; while that, which stands on any other consideration, will be subject to change every hour. For how can the building stand fast if the foundation sink away? Either some storm of contention will overthrow that love, or it will fall down of itself through age. Or else it will degenerate into jealousy, the devouring canker-worm, that eats up the hearts of married persons, and consumes or spoils the sweet fruit they might reap. But he that loves his wife, because she is his wife, and God commands him to love her as such, will love her, so long as she is his wife, whatever she prove beside. Thou lovest thy wife, because she is fair, good-humoured, courteous: but what if all these should fail? Thou lovest thy husband, because he is handsome, sensible, kind: but where will thy love be, if these things should alter? You see, there is no firmness in that love, which is procured only by these motives. But if thou love thy wife or husband, because God enjoins it, then thy love will be constant and perpetual.

3. This property of love, that it is spiritual, built on the rock of God's commandments, answers all the objections, which many would make
make against it in their own cases. "Who, says a man, can love such a wife?" And "What wife, says a woman, can love such an husband?" I answer, A man whose affection is spiritual, can love even such a wife. And the woman who has attained to spiritual love, finds it possible to love even such an husband.

4. But as the ground of their love must be spiritual, so must also the working thereof. It must seek the spiritual good of the person beloved, by every possible means. For that love, which seeks only their temporal welfare, deserves no better name, than carnal love. But surely those who love each other, because God bids them, will love each other as God bids them. They will be careful of each other's souls, as well as of their bodies and estates. But alas! how exceedingly does the love of most married people fail herein? Thou art kind to thy wife or husband, and it goes to thy heart, to think any thing should be wanting for their good. It is well: But so may a Turk as well as thou, if by good thou meanest only that which is temporal. But dost thou seek to help thy yoke-fellow to heavenly, as well as earthly benefits? This is spiritual love: This becomes a christian husband, and a christian wife. Be not then carnal in your love, walking as men, but spiritual, as the children of God.

5. But remember farther, that your love must be matrimonial, as well as spiritual. It must be matrimonial with regard, 1. To the degree, and 2. To the effect. For the first, A man should love his wife, a woman her husband, above all the creatures in the world.
Next to the Living God, the wife is to have the highest place in the husband's heart, and he in her's. No neighbour, no friend, no parent, no child, should be so near and dear to either, as the other. They are joined in the closest of all unions; therefore their mutual affection should be most abundant. They must do more, and suffer more for each other, than for any other in the world. They must bear with more faults in each other than any besides, and be ready to take more pains for each other.

6. Secondly. As to the effect of this love, it should so knit them together, that they may receive full satisfaction in each other. Love should cause a man to account his wife the only woman in the world: and so the wife to account her husband the only man in the world. The persons of each should be to the other the most precious of all persons. Do any object, This cannot be, unless every man, and every woman, could find in their own yoke-fellow as amiable qualities, as are to be found in others? I answer, Not the good qualities of either, but the good pleasure of God is the ground of their mutual dearness. Good qualities make this duty more easy: but it is still a duty, though good qualities be away. A man may lawfully think another woman a better woman than his own wife. But he may not love another woman, though more virtuous, above his own, though less virtuous. This is the effect of matrimonial love, to settle the heart of each upon the other, above all in the world besides. It admits of none equal in affection, but places the yoke-fellow next to our own soul. Nor will it bear the desire of change, but so links their hearts to-
The Duties

...that in this respect they are only dear to each other.

7. The means to get and confirm this love is, to have one house, one table, one bed. But besides this natural means of procuring love; there are two spiritual means. The one is, to take special notice of God's gracious providence in their match. They must often consider, that God joined them together, for their mutual benefit, as being on the whole fitter for each other, than any other besides could be. We know, that a mean gift is often respected, for the giver's sake. Wherefore remember, that God, in great goodness, (for crosses also come to God's children from his goodness,) hath bestowed this yoke-fellow, and thou shalt dearly love thy wife or husband, though perhaps not so well tempered. For the dearness of the giver will countervail the defects of the gift. And then thy yoke-fellow's distempers will grieve thee indeed, but not alienate thy affection.

8. Another means of uniting your souls is constantly to join in exercises of piety. Pray together; sing together; confer together, concerning your heavenly country. And this will be found an excellent means of confirming your mutual love. These will nourish the spirit of holiness in you; and that enkindles love, wherever it comes. By these you will soon perceive yourselves to have been spiritually profitable to each other: and to receive a spiritual benefit, cannot but beget and nourish spiritual affection. Naturally you would grow weary of each other: but if you season your natural communion, with this communion in spiritual things,
it will prevent all satiety. Jars and contentions are the great hindrances of love: but the joining together in these exercises, will cause you to jar far more seldom; nor will any sudden jar fester or rankle, so as to breed hard thoughts of one another, which are the bane of love. Prayer will prevent most contentions, and compose all: for when you shall appear before God in prayer, instead of blaming each other, you will each blame yourself, and then all contention will cease.

9. But some may say, "What shall I do, who have such an husband or wife, as neither can nor will join with me, in the service of God?" I answer, Pray for that yoke-fellow, who will not pray with thee. The less able or willing they are to intreat for themselves, the more frequently and earnestly intreat God for them. It may be, God will give thee thy desire, and turn their hearts to thee. At least, thy own soul will gain an increase of heavenly love to them. And this is sure, that to love your yoke-fellow spiritually and fervently, though you are not loved again, is far better, than to be loved of them, without so loving.

CHAP. III.

Of the Effects of Love.

1. THE Effects of Nuptial Love are three, Pleasingness, Faithfulness, Helpfulness. The first, which must mix itself with all the rest, is an earnest desire to please each other, so far as it is possible to be done, without sinning.
against God. Wherefore the husband must do
or leave undone, any thing he can, that he may
please his wife: and the wife must in any thing
crost her own desires that she may satisfy his.
In diet, attire, choice of company, and all
things else, each must fulfil the other's desire as
absolutely as can be done, without transgressing
the law of God. As difficult as this may seem
at first, Practice will, make it easy. Resolutely
begin, and the proceeding will be pleasanter
than the beginning. Especially if both labour
together, each seeking to oblige the other. For
it cannot be difficult to satisfy one who desires
to take as well as to give satisfaction.
2. But some will say, "This suits not me:
Nothing will satisfy my froward yoke-fellow." I
answer, It may be so: It is not in any one's
power to make a froward person take a thing
well. But it is in your power, to do your best,
to satisfy such an one; and to strive the more,
the more averse to peace your companion is.
"But it is hard, to be still striving against the
stream." It is; but duties must not be omitted
because they are hard. The scholar, who has
an hard lesson, must take the more pains to
learn it. So the husband or wife that has a
perverse companion, must take the more pains
to please them. Let the difficulty therefore,
make thee more diligent; and encourage thyself
in this tedious labour, by thinking, "If after
all, I cannot please my yoke-fellow, I shall not
fail to please God. Yea, and the harder the
work is, the better he will take it at my hands.
Therefore I will so behave, that they may re-
ceive content in all things, if any thing but sin
will content them." This caution indeed we
Of HUSBANDS AND WIVES.

must observe, for we may not, to please any one, sin against God. If any thing but sin will satisfy, thou must do it, be it ever so contrary to thy own will. But if thou canst not fulfil the desires of a creature, without breaking the law of God, then thou must not fulfil them: Better offend a mortal man than the immortal God.

3. In the next place, husband and wife are to be faithful and helpful to each other. These two must always be united: Therefore we speak of them together. This was the principal thing which God designed in the creation of the woman. "It is not good, faith he, for man to be alone: I will make him an help meet for him." And undoubtedly man was intended to give, as well as to receive help. This helpful fidelity consists in their mutual care to abstain from and prevent whatever might grieve or hurt either: and to do themselves, and incite others to do, whatever might comfort or benefit either. And this must extend to the soul, the body, the name, and the estate.

4. First, to the souls, by provoking each other on all occasions to inward and outward holiness. The husband must further the wife in all good- nes, and the wife the husband: For she has also liberty to stir up her husband, by intreaty and fair means. And as they have special oppor- tunity, so they should be always ready, with special diligence, to "provoke one another to love and to good works." O how sweet is the society when they thus watch all occasions to further each other in godliness. Again. Be- ing continually together, they may discover in each other divers corruptions and imperfections.
They must not turn these into matter of contempt, but of compassion and care for each other's reformation. They should observe each other's temper, till they perceive what infirmities each is chiefly inclined to, and then diligently abstain from what may provoke that evil, and apply all means that may heal it. If all their labour does not avail, they must not fear to seek the help of some common friend, who possibly may effect that cure, which themselves had endeavoured in vain. And if even this doth not succeed, till they must wait and pray, referring the matter to God, the only physician of the soul, who is able in due time to redress all.

5. The same faithful helpfulness they owe to the bodies of each other. They must shun all things that might cause sickness or pain to each other, and readily undergo any pains or coil, according to their power, to procure whatever is necessary either to keep or recover their health. They must comfort each other, in the days of sorrow, that worldly sorrow work not death. The wife must be health to her husband in his sickness: She must support his weakness, and he her's. Sickness and weakness are things which of themselves are hard enough to be borne. There needs not the addition of unkindness, to make the burden heavier. Let every husband and wife avoid or mend this fault, and be particularly careful of their behaviour, at that time above all, when either is visited with grief, or weakness, or sickness. When your wife is sick or pained, then comfort her with loving words, and cheer her by a tender countenance. Then see that she want no locking.
Looking to, no help which thou canst procure. When thy husband is sick or weak, then stay him with comfortable speech, revive him with diligent attendance. Do all thou canst to ease his pain, and to recover his strength. Let thy love and care be his best phyllic, and thyself his best physician. This is to be faithful to thy husband's body, and to "cherish him in sickness as in health."

6. In the third place, man and wife must be faithfully helpful to each others names, and that in a double respect: In maintaining them both between themselves, and also among others. First, they must hold fast a good opinion of each other, so far as it may possibly stand with truth. Yea, it is no blame for them to have somewhat too good an opinion of each other: For a man to think his wife not only more handsome, but more wise and good than she is; (making her virtues carry a greater show to the eye, by looking at them through the glass of love :) and for her to think him not only more proper, but more kind and good than he really is, by taking things with that largeness of good interpretation, which much love naturally puts upon them. Certainly then they should be peremptory to give no place to ungrounded, unwarranted surmises. They must on no account suffer their hearts to grow mistrustful of each other. All rash, ill-built, hasty surmises, must be far from them. Otherwise love will go out at the same door, at which suspicion came in. He or she that has a suspicious head, has not a truly loving heart. Such may be lustful or fond; but an holy, virtuous, spiritual affection they cannot have. So long as they give way.
way to evil surmisings there is no place for this. And therefore of all domestic makebates, of all that breeds quarrels between married people, nothing in the world is more pestilently effectual to this bad end, than jealousy. Having leavened the heart, it makes the speech tart and sharp, the countenance sour, the whole behaviour distasteful. No good words, no good actions, or gestures, or looks, can proceed from a jealous heart. Jealousy will make one suck mischievous things out of his own fingers ends. Suffer not therefore this evil weed to grow up in the garden of matrimony. For no good herb will prosper by it; no praiseworthy thing will flourish. Let all then that are married, detest any thought of this kind, that may arise. Let their hearts disdain to give the least credit, unless the proofs be more than manifest. Away then with this makebate, jealousy, this quarreller, suspicion, this breeder of brawls, this mother and nurse of contention, this underminer of love and of good husbandry, of all that should be profitable to an household. Away with it, I say, out of thine heart: chase it far from thy breast, from thy house. It is better to receive ten wrongs without suspecting, than to suspect one that is not received. Wherefore as thou wouldst stand for the good name of thy companion, against the tongue of a slanderer, so stand for it against the dreams of thy own heart, against thy own slanderous imagination. And if any person will suffer his lips to be so ill employed, as to become Satan's bellows by, blowing these coals betwixt you, by telling thee this or that, rebuke such a person, reject his word with detestation, flee his company.
pany, nor defile thy ears and heart, by giving
gentle audience to a whisperer and tale-bearer.
In a word, wouldst thou love or be loved?
Wouldst thou live otherwise in marriage, than
as in a prison or dungeon? Then strengthen thy
heart against all suspicion, and rather be any
thing than jealous.

7. Ye must be tender also of each others re-
putation abroad. This requireth two things:
first, that each labour to conceal the weaknesses
of the other, so far as is possible, from all men.
The husband must endeavour, that none may
know of his wife's faults but himself; and the
wife must do her best to keep her husband's
faults from the knowledge of every creature.
On the contrary, to publish each others sins, is
a monstrous treachery. To backbite an enemy
is a sin; how much more to backbite one's own
yoke-fellow? Whose faults can a man cover if
not his wife's, that is in effect, his own? Or
who can be free from reproach, if one so near
as his wife, deface his good name? It is im-
possible but man and wife must sooner or later
discover their weaknesses to one another. And
for them to be playing the tell-tale against each
other, what soul does not lothe to think of it?
If thou hast been so sinfully talkative before,
now for shame lay thy hand upon thy mouth,
that thou mayest no more incur the name of
fool, by making thy tongue to spread abroad
foolly.

8. But besides this, you must faithfully keep
each others secrets. A man may have occasion
to acquaint his wife with things which he would
not reveal to others; or may a woman, to ac-
quaint her husband. Now if in such cases a
wife find, that her husband has revealed what she entrusted him alone, or he find, that she has revealed what he spoke to her in the confidence of love, this will breed such a distrust of the offending party, as will not easily be removed. Wherefore let husbands and wives always mind this: If he lay up any thing in her breast, let him find it safe there, as in a chest, which cannot be opened by any pick-lock. If she commits a thing to his safe keeping, let it be imprisoned in his bosom. Otherwise no man can chuse but be strange to one, whom experience has convinced of blabbing. And it is an infallible truth, That there is no comfortable living with one whom you cannot trust.

9. The last part of faithful helpfulness to each other, is that which concerns their estates. And to this end it is requisite, first, that all things be common between them, goods as well as persons: for if they make not a division in the greater, it is absurd to make it in the less. They should have one house and one purse: for they are one, and their estates should be one also. And having thus united their fortunes, let them, secondly, practice good husbandry therein. This implies three things, diligence in getting, prudence in saving, providence in foreseeing. These three, industry, frugality and forecast, make up good husbandry. And if any of these are wanting, so much is wanting to the perfection of it; and so much also will be wanting, for their comfort and prosperity.
A man and his wife, who before were members of other families, join together that they may become the roots of a new family: wherein by training up their servants and children, they provide plants for God's vineyard, the Church. In this family the husband is the head; the wife is the next, as subordinate to him. They are both to maintain and govern their family. First, they must join in providing it with all necessaries, imitating herein the Father of this great family, the world, who fills every creature with good things fit for it. But they must govern as well as maintain their household; the man, as God's immediate officer, the woman, as an officer deputed by him, not equal, but subordinate: he, by the authority derived immediately from God, she by authority derived from her husband.

2. The first point, in order to the due government of their family, is to educate their children well; more especially in their tender years. I cannot lay down a better method for this, than is laid down in a letter printed some years since; part of which is here subjoined.

"According to your desire, I have collected the principal rules I observed in educating my family. The children, (she had ten who came to man's estate, eight of whom were frequently
at home together,) were put into a more regular method of living, in such things as they were capable of, from their birth, as in dressing, undressing, changing their linen, &c. The first quarter commonly passes in sleep. After that, they were, if possible, laid into their cradles awake, and rocked asleep, and so they were kept rocking till it was time for them to awake. This was done to bring them to a regular course of sleeping, which at first was three hours in the morning, and three in the afternoon: afterwards two hours till they needed none at all.

"When they were turned a year old, they were taught to fear the rod, and to cry softly. By this means they escaped abundance of correction, which otherwise they must have had, and that odious noise of the crying of the children was rarely heard in the house.

"As soon as they were grown pretty strong, they were confined to three meals a day. They were never suffered to choose their meat, but always eat such things as were provided for the family. Whatever they had, they were never permitted to eat of more than one thing. Drinking or eating between meals was never allowed, but in case of sickness, which rarely happened.

"At six they had their supper. At seven their maid washed them, and got them all to bed by eight. Then she left them in their several rooms awake; for we allowed no such thing, as fitting by a child till it fell asleep.

"They were so constantly used to eat and drink what was given them, that when any of them was ill, there was no difficulty in making them
them take the most unpleasant medicine. This I mention, to shew a person may be taught to take any thing, be it ever so disagreeable.

"In order to form the minds of children, the first thing to be done, is to conquer their will. To inform their understanding is a work of time, and must proceed by slow degrees: but the subjecting the will is a thing which must be done at once; and the sooner the better. For by our neglecting timely correction, they contract a stubbornness, which is hardly ever to be conquered, and never without using that severity, which would be as painful to us as to the children. Therefore, I call those cruel parents, who pass for kind and indulgent; who permit their children to contract habits, which they know must be afterwards broken.

"Whenever a child is corrected, it must be conquered. And when his will is totally subdued, then a great many childish follies and inadvertencies may be past by. Some should be overlooked and taken no notice of, and others mildly reproved. But no wilful transgression should ever be forgiven, without chastisement, less or more.

"I insist upon conquering the wills of children betimes, because this is the only foundation of a religious education, without which both precept and example will be ineffectual. But when this is thoroughly done, then a child is capable of being governed by the reason of its parents, till its own understanding comes to maturity, and the principles of religion have taken root.

"I cannot yet dismiss this subject: as self-will is the root of all sin and misery, so what-
ever cherishes this in children, ensures their
after wretchedness and irreligion; and whatever
checks and mortifies it, promotes their future
happiness and piety. This is still more evident,
if we consider, that religion is nothing else
but the doing the will of God, not our own:
and that self-will, being the grand impediment
to our temporal and eternal happiness, no in-
dulgence of it can be trivial, no denial of it
unprofitable. Heaven or hell depends on this
alone. So that the parent who studies to sub-
due it in his children, works together with God
in the saving a soul; the parent who indulges
it, does the devil's work, makes religion im-
practicable, salvation unattainable, and does all
that in him lies, to damn the child, soul and
body, for ever."

3. This advice, first to conquer the wills of
children, is exactly agreeable to the Apostle's
direction to parents, Eph. vi. 4, Train them up
(I do not say, in the nurture and admonition of
the Lord; for I know not what that odd ex-
pression means, but) εὐτεχεία καὶ νοημία Κυρίω, in
the discipline and instruction of the Lord. Ἐκτεχεία,
in the discipline first; then νοημία, in christian
knowledge; because they may be inured to dis-
cipline, before they are capable of instruction.
This therefore I cannot but earnestly repeat,
break their wills betimes; begin this great
work before they can run alone, before they can
speak plain, perhaps before they can speak at
all. Whatever pains it costs, conquer their
stubbornness: Break the will if you would not
damn the child. I conjure you, not to neglect,
not to delay this. Therefore, 1. Let a child,
from a year old, be taught to fear the rod, and
OF HUSBANDS AND WIVES.

to cry softly. It cannot be expressed, how much pains this will save both the parent and the child. In order to this, 2. Let him have nothing he cries for; absolutely nothing, great or small. Let this be an unvariable rule; else you undo all your own work. 3. At all events, from that age, make him do as he is bid, if you whip him ten times running to effect it. Let none persuade you, it is cruelty to do this; it is real cruelty not to do it. If you spare the rod, you spoil the child: If you do not conquer, you ruin him. Break his will now, and his soul shall live, and he will probably bless you to all eternity.

4. But we are by nature not only full of self-will, but likewise of pride, atheism, anger, falsehood, and idolatry. Now the end of education is to counteract and remove all the corruption of nature: of Christian education in particular, termed by St. Paul, "The discipline and instruction of the Lord." Set yourselves, therefore, ye Christian parents, to the work. Indeed it is not a little one. In order to accomplish it, you will need both the wisdom and the power of God, in order to root up, instead of strengthening, as most do, all these roots of bitterness. Self-will has been spoken of already. The next evil you are to oppose in children is pride. In order to guard against this, 1. Never commend them to their face, either for their goodness, sense, or beauty. It is deadly poison. It is the direct way to plunge their souls in everlasting perdition. 2. Suffer no other to do it, if you can possibly prevent it: and if any should commend them in their hearing, regard not complaisance,
or good-breeding so called, but check them immediately. 3. Lovingly shew them their faults, especially their wrong tempers, as soon as ever their understanding dawns. 4. In particular, labour to convince them of atheism: shew them, that they are without God in the world: that they do not know God; that they do not love, delight in, or enjoy him, any more than do the beasts that perish. 5. Do not teach them revenge: never say, "Who hurts my child? Give me a blow for him." Do not encourage them in anger, by laughing at, or seeming pleased with their little sroward tricks. Rather check them for the least appearance of it, much more for an angry word or action. 6. Let property be inviolably maintained among your little ones. Let none of them dare to take the very least thing, not an apple, or a pin, without, much less against the consent of the owner. 7. Do not teach them lying. Never say, "It was not my child that did so." On the contrary, inure them to confess their faults, and to tell the truth at all hazards. 8. Begin early to guard them against idolatry, against the love of the world in all its branches. Do nothing to feed in them the desire of the flesh; that is, of the pleasures of sense. Keep them on this account, (as well as on account of health,) to the plainest, simplest diet. If they do not want it as physic, let them taste no liquid till ten or twelve years old, but water or milk. Above all, let no tea come within their lips, no strong drink of any kind. If they never have it, they will never desire it. It is wholly your fault if they do. Do nothing to feed in them the desire of the eye. Let their dress
dresses also be plain and simple. Let them always (so far as your circumstances will allow) be clean, but never fine. Let them never wear any thing that is showy, any thing that is gay or glittering. Put nothing upon them that attracts the eye, either their own, or that of others. Give them nothing, nor suffer others to give them any thing that is purely ornamental. Dress your children just as you dress yourself, that when they are grown up, they may have nothing to unlearn. More full directions on these heads, and many others, you have in the "Instructions for children;" which I advise every parent to read again and again, and to put in practice with all his power.

5. The government of your family in general respects matters of God, and matters of the world. Your first care must be, that the living God be only worshipped by all in your house. To this end, you must read the scriptures, call upon the name of God among them, and catechize them in the principles of religion, that none under your roof may be ignorant of the great truths of the gospel. To this end also you must see, that they sanctify the sabbath: you must carefully and constantly bring them to the public assemblies, and examine them afterwards, how they profit thereby. If this care be wanting, you will want the blessing of God on all your other cares. Wherefore let man and wife be principally helpful to each other in this business. When the husband is present, let him read and pray with the family, and teach them the fear of the Lord. In his absence, let his wife do these duties, or at least take care to see them done. And let both of them provide
and allow convenient time and leisure for the same: and let each quicken the slackness of the other, if either begin to grow weary. If he is worse than an infidel, who provideth not good and clothing for his family, what is he that lets their souls go naked, for want of that which is both food and clothing to them; I mean, instruction in the things that pertain to life and godliness? Herein then, let all husbands and wives be of one mind in the Lord, using all good means to plant and water piety in the hearts of all that are under their care.

6. As to matters of the world, first, they must appoint their inferiors such works and services, as they are severally fit for, and then follow and look after them, that they may perform those services. Had not the Lord seen, that inferiors would need this, he would not have made this difference in the family. But God saw, that the best servants need this help, and therefore ordained governors; generally two, that the absence of the one might be supplied by the presence of the other. Secondly, you must mark the carriage of your inferiors, and see what disorders do, or are ready to break in, whether openly or secretly, that they may be either prevented or resisted speedily. Idleness, tatling, discord, and many more evils, are apt to steal even on good servants and children, which the Lord, well knowing, made rulers in the house, to keep all in good order: and if this care be some trouble, yet the mischiefs which arise from the want of it are much more troublesome: whereas, if the eyes of the master and mistress be always open, much peace will follow in the house. Thirdly,
ly, You must join in admonishing, encouraging, reproving, and, if need be, correcting your inferiors. Both must discountenance what is evil, and encourage what is good. And in so doing, you must take care to maintain each others authority to the full. If one encourage, the other must not oppose; if one reprove, the other must not defend. If he see cause to correct the children, she must not grow angry or hinder: neither, when she would correct, must he save them out of her hands. Nay, suppose either should exceed, correcting either without cause or above measure, the other must not find fault, in the hearing of the inferiors; but they must debate the matter between themselves, and keep their disagreements from appearing in the family. So therefore join hands, that your dissention may not blast the fruit of all your endeavours. So shall you preserve your authority, encrease your love to each other, and procure amendment in your inferiors.

CHAP. V.
Of a MAN's keeping his Authority.

1. It is the duty of a husband to govern his wife, and to maintain her. The former implies, that he keep his authority, and that he use it. And, first, every man is bound to keep himself in that place, wherein his Maker hath set him, and to hold fast that precedence, which God hath assigned him. The Lord hath entitled him Your head, and he may not take a lower place. The contempt re-
dounds upon God, which a man takes upon himself, by making his wife his master. But perhaps some will say, "All this is reasonable, if it were practicable. But there are some wives so proud, headstrong, and stubborn, that their husbands cannot govern them." I answer, most men blame their wives when the real fault is in themselves. A man cannot hinder a violent woman from assaulting his authority, but he may from winning it: not indeed by violence, but by skill; not by main force, but by a steady, and wise proceeding. And, first, let him endeavour to exceed his wife in goodness, as he does in place. Let him walk uprightly and religiously in his family, and give a good example to all in the house. Then any reasonable woman will give him the better place, who sees to be a better person. Take pains then to make thyself good, and that is the most compendious way to make thyself reverenced.

2. This in general. But in particular, shun those evils, that make a man seem vile in the eyes of those, that are round about him. The first of these is bitterness: sharp, tart carriage; reviling, passionate, provoking language, are fitly so called, being as offensive to the mind, as gall and wormwood to the palate. This bitterness shews folly, and works hatred, and therefore must needs be a great underminer of authority. For wherever want of wisdom is, there will ensue want of reverence. He that would retain his pre-eminence, must, secondly, avoid unthriftness, another great enemy to reverence. Drunkenness, gaming, and ill company, are the three parts of unthriftness. And whoever gives way to any of these, must expect to
OF HUSBANDS AND WIVES.

177

to be despised. Thirdly, Lightness must be avoided by husbands, all foolish, childish behaviour, that wears no stamp of gravity or discretion, but favours of a kind of boyishness. If the husband puts a fool's coat upon his back, can he blame his wife for laughing at him? Cast therefore all those base evils from you, and strive for holiness and gravity of conversation, that your superiority, supported by such pillars, may stand upright and unshaken.

3. But how is a man to use this authority, so that it may answer the end, for which it is given? The end of it is, "that he may present her to God, holy, and without blemish," that he may so govern her, as to weaken every corruption, and strengthen every grace in her soul. In order to do this, he must temper the exercise of his authority, by justice, wisdom, and mildness. Justice is the life and soul of government, without which it is no better than a dead carcass: Wisdom is the eye of government, without which it is like a strong man stark blind. Mildness is the health and good constitution of government; and when these are all joined together, then a husband is, as it were, God in the family, a resemblance of his sovereignty and goodness.

4. Justice is to be practised in directing and recompensing. For the first, A man must not so abuse his authority, as to enjoin any thing sinful: What God commands, he must not forbid; what God forbids, he must not command. Let no husband forget, that the Lord in heaven, and the magistrate on earth, are above him. He and is wife are equally subject to these. Therefore let him never set his private authority against
against theirs, nor make his wife undutiful to either of these, by a false claim of duty to himself. For instance: let no husband command his wife to lie for his advantage, to break the sabbath for his gain, to partake of his fraud, or sin of any kind. Neither let any man forbid his wife to pray unto God, to attend his word and sacraments, to use any of the means, which God hath made the ordinary channel of his grace. See then, all ye husbands, that your directions to your wives agree with the laws of God. Otherwise to disobey you, is the better obedience, and to reject your evil directions, is not to deny subjection to your persons, but to your sins, yea, to the devil himself, who rules in you.

5. But this rule of justice must extend a little farther. The husband must not urge his authority, not only in things unlawful, but even in those that seem unlawful to his wife's mistaken conscience. He ought not to force her to what she thinks a sin. Conscience is God's immediate officer, and though it is mistaken, must be obeyed, till it be better informed. Wherefore, when a woman, through weakness, fancies a thing indifferent to be sinful, a man must not compel her to act against her conscience, but with pity and gentleness try to remove that mistake. "But what if she pretend conscience, when it is but wilfulness?" Then he must wait a while, and if persuasions avail not, at length use his authority, and enjoin her to change her obstinacy into subjection. "But how shall I know, whether she be scrupulous or stubborn?" I answer, Scruple of conscience is grounded on the word of God, on some text which.
which carries an appearance at least of condemning the thing in question. But obstinacy is backed with no part of God's word. Therefore, if a woman produce some scripture, though perhaps misinterpreted, for her scruple, she must be tenderly dealt with. But if she plead conscience, without God's word, it is properly a mere pretence. Again, it may be a mistaken conscience, when things indifferent are deemed either necessary or sinful. But if conscience be pleaded against doing what God hath plainly commanded, this is wilfulness in error, not weakness of conscience.

6. Justice is likewise to be exercised in requiting either the bad or good carriage of the wife. Bad behaviour may be requited with reproof or correction. But be sure not to reprove without a fault. Find not a fault where no fault is, for fear of making one, where there was none. And observe: a fault reformed is to be accounted no fault. Therefore it must never be mentioned more. And when a real fault requires punishment, still the husband must come exceeding slowly to it, and be very seldom in it, never until he is compelled, because all other means are ineffectual. For a man to look and behave coolly towards his wife, to withdraw the testimonies of his love, to cease to trust and to speak familiarly and cheerfully to her, these things I call punishments. And all things of this kind must be more or less sharp, as the fault is greater or less, being suited, not to the passion, or loss, or hurt of the reprover, but to the offence of the reproved. On the other hand, rewards and commendations should be proportioned to the nature and degree of her good
good behaviour; the husband being careful to feed her virtues, nourish her obedience, and confirm all her amiable qualities.

7. The next virtue of the husband is wisdom, which gives rules for the right ordering his authority. It is a main part of this wisdom, to conform the use of his authority, to the disposition of his wife. There is a great difference in tempers: some are more stiff, some more pliant: Some are easy to be ruled, some the contrary. Some require more sharpness, others will be better wrought upon by gentleness: and wisdom teaches to frame all commands, reproofs, rewards, according to the condition of the person. A soft, tender woman must be dealt with tenderly: a rough, high-spirited one, with more sternness and severity. And herein an husband must not follow his own inclinations, but bow himself to the temper of his wife. As she is more apt to grieve or rage, to be dejected or careless, so ought a man to shape his words and behaviour, that he may most heal and least provoke those passions to which she is most liable. St. Peter points all men to this part of discretion, when he terms women, the weaker vessel; meaning, subject to more natural infirmities than the man. So much the more should the husband shew himself a man of knowledge toward her. Our Saviour's government may be our example. He well considers the particular nature of all his members, sees the tempers and infirmities of each, and deals with them accordingly. And his wisdom appears in mixing a fit cup of consolation or affliction for every soul. Every husband must carefully imitate this: for if some women were reproved
OF HUSBANDS AND WIVES.

reproved so frequently and so sharply as others; they would be quite disheartened: and if some were to receive so great kindness and such commendations as others need, they would be utterly destroyed by pride. Now the art of government must moderate all these things, according to the nature of the governed. And this art, the Giver of wisdom will not deny, to them that earnestly crave it at his hands.

8. Another part of wisdom is, to choose a fit time and place for every act of authority. Two rules may be observed with regard to time, particularly in reproving, that being a thing wherein most caution should be used, because it is most apt to be taken ill, and because if it speed well, it does much good, if not, it does much hurt. But in all other parts of government, the same rules are so needful, that much mischief will grow by not observing them. Now as in this case there are two persons concerned, so a time of reproving or commanding must be chosen, suitable to both. It must be then used, when it is fit to use it well, and she to take it well. First then, when a man himself is quiet, in tune, and free from perturbation, then probably he will reprove or command well. But when anger boils within, let him forbear exercising any part of his authority, till he recover his due temper. Authority cannot be well managed, but by the hand of wisdom. Therefore undertake not to exercise it, at a time when wisdom is banished. Go not about such a work, but when thou art thyself, when thy mind is settled, thy judgment clear. Then shew thy wife her duty, then tell her of her faults; else she will never mend her faults, or see her duty. Chuse,
Secondly, the time wherein she is most capable of receiving information or reproof: when she is cheerfully quiet, well-pleased, free from excessive grief, anger, pain, sickness, which often untunes the soul, then is a good time to advise or tell her of a fault. Else her passions will make her as unable to take any thing well, as his will make him unable to do it well.

9. As to place, commendations or easy commands may be given before others. But for reproofs, the most secret place is generally the most convenient. Or if you would have her do or forbear any thing, which you think will be displeasing to her to hear, tell your mind in private, and then persuade where you may freely speak all that is fit to be spoken. “But what if women offend in public, before servants and children, and strangers?” I answer, in this case, a man may shew his dislike, that others may not be hurt by the bad example. But he should delay the proper, home reproof, till his wife and he be together alone.

10. Next to wisdom, is mildness, a very necessary virtue in this society. No woman can endure her husband’s government with comfort, if gentleness do not temper it. The Lord Jesus is the most gentle and meek governor in the world: and when he requireth us to take his yoke upon us, he commends himself as meek and lowly, his yoke as easy and his burden as light. This is the best precedent for husbands to follow, the most worthy copy for them to write after. The Apostle teacheth us to be gentle, not only to the good, but also to them that are froward. Surely then the husband must be gentle toward his wife, though she be of a froward disposition.
OF HUSBANDS AND WIVES. 183
disposition. Yea, we are commanded to shew all meekness to all men: much more should each man shew it to his wife. And that in both the parts of authority, in directing and recompening.

11. As to the former, the husband should beware of extending the use of his commanding power too far. Let him use it as seldom, and as little as possible. It may suffice him to know, that God has given him the right of directing, in every thing which is not sinful. But in the exercise of it, he must shew himself of a kind and free nature, not rigorously taking upon him, to command all he may, but willingly gratifying his wife, in some, in many, in most things, that she may with the more cheerfulness, be subject to him in others. Let him also shew mildness, in forbearing hard commandments, as much as possibly he can. Beware of crossing your wife without cause, and forcing her to things against her natural disposition. Enjoin nothing of this kind, unless there be an absolute necessity. And as to the manner of commanding, let nothing be imperiously prescribed, but with sweet kindness and familiar requests. Indeed, if the wife will try for mastery, and strive to cast off the yoke of obedience, then it is needful for the husband, with good words, to stand for his authority, even somewhat stiffly and peremptorily professing, that he will have his will in things lawful. But this course should be rarely taken; and that only in matters of importance. In other cases, it is better mildly to wish this or that, than haughtily to enjoin it.

Q 2

12. But
12. But mildness is never so needful as in reproving, both with regard to the matter and the manner of it. For the matter, find not fault with every foible; chide not for every infirmity. What is not of a gross nature, or done wilfully, may be passed over either with none, or half a word. The love which passes by weaknesses is necessary toward strangers; much more with those who are so nearly united. Be not therefore extreme or rigorous, but be affected toward thy wife, as a tender mother toward her child. Pray to God against all her faults; see and commend all her virtues: but petty wants and little ordinary weaknesses, seldom take notice of, or reprove. Let her perceive, that thou dost, but will not know them. And thy unwillingness to see and reprove, will make her, if she has any spark of generosity, more willing to see and reform. But an ever-lowering and ever-chiding husband will make his wife worse than she would otherwise be. For the manner of reproving, even when it is most needful, it should be very gentle. The words and gestures used to press the fault, should be mild and amiable, breathing out love and pity at once. No patient is so desirous of health, that he will drink a potion scalding hot. So it is with reproof: if it, as it were, scald the ear with bitter upbraiding, with railing words, and a fiery look, it will never gain passage to the heart. Compassion, kindness, declaring your sorrow for her fault, desire of her good, and care for her amendment, these incline the will to accept of an admonition, and help the effect of it. I am not against the wholesome earnestness of reproving:
but this may be without bitterness or fierceness. An admonition is then healthfully sharp and earnest, when a man with much plainness of speech and strength of reason, lays open the greatness and danger of the sin, and vehemently enforces them on the sinner's conscience: but compassionately still, with a declaration of more sorrow than anger, of more grief for her fault and danger, than displeasure against her person.

C H A P. VI.

Of the Wife's Peculiar Duties.

1. The special duties of a wife may be reduced to two heads, To know herself the inferior, and to behave as such. First, she must know herself the inferior; she must be thoroughly convinced, that she is not her husband's equal, without which there can be no content, either in her heart, or in her house. Where the woman counts herself equal with her husband, (much more, if she counts herself better,) the root of all good carriage is withered, the fountain thereof dried up. Whoever therefore would be a good wife, let this sink into her inmost soul, "My husband is my superior, my better: he has the right to rule over me. God has given it him, and I will not strive against God. He is my superior, my better." Unless she has learnt this lesson perfectly, unless she has it at her fingers' ends, if her very heart does not thoroughly agree thereto, there will be nothing between them but wrangling, repining, striving: so that their life will be little else than a continual battle.
a trying for masteries. Let us grant, You may have more wit and understanding than him, more readiness of speech, more skill in business. Yet consider; your servant may exceed you in all these, as much as you do him. And yet you would be loath that your servant should claim an equality either with him or you. Know then, a man may be superior in place to him, who is his superior in gifts: and know likewise, thou dost abuse the gifts of God, if thence thou infringe thy husband's superiority. Wherefore, with all thy understanding, understand this, That God has made him thy governor and ruler, and thee his inferior, to be ruled by him, and to submit to him in all things. Though he be of meaner birth and smaller capacity, though he had no wealth or name before thou didst marry him, yet from that hour the case is changed, and he is no longer beneath thee, but above thee. Set it down therefore as a conclusion never to be called in question, "My husband is my superior."

2. The wife knowing herself the inferior, must, secondly, behave as such, by reverence and subjection to her husband. First, by reverence She owes this to her husband, as much as the children or servants do to her: yea, as they do to him; only hers is sweetened with more love and familiarity. She is no less bound to "reverence her husband," than are the rest of the family. This alone is the difference, she may be more familiar, not more rude, as being more dear, not less subject than they.

3. And this reverence must be both inward and outward. First, she must have an inward, dutiful respect for her husband. She must regard him as God's deputy, not looking to his person
OF HUSBANDS AND WIVES. 187

person but his place, nor think so much what he is, as whose officer. So the Apostle, "Let the wife see that she reverence her husband." Of all things, let her not fail in this. He here prescribes such a loving, not slavish, fear, as stands with the closest union of heart. And from this fear, she abhors and shuns, as the greatest evil which can befall her, next to the breaking the commandments of God, to displease or offend her husband. We stand in due awe of God, when we loath the breach of his commandments, as the greatest of all evils. And the wife duly stands in awe of her husband, when next to that evil, she shuns the disobeying or grieving him, who is above her, next to God. I know many women care as little for their husbands, as their husbands do for them. But if thou wilt ever please God, take much pains with thy heart, to make it stand in awe of thy husband. As a wife grows in this, so may she look to get the better of all her other infirmities; as she is careless herein, so shall she be pestered with various other evils. "But how shall she bring her heart to this?" By looking through her husband to God the author of marriage, and putting herself often in mind, not of his deserts but of God's ordinance. The husband is to the wife, "the image and glory of God:" the power that is given to him is God's originally, and his, by God's appointment. Look not therefore on the qualities of thy husband, but upon his place. If thou despisest him, the contempt redounds upon God, who hath ordained him to be thy head. If therefore thy heart be seasoned with the fear of God, thou wilt fear thy husband also.

4. And
4. And this inward will produce outward reverence, both in her words and actions. Her words are either to himself, or of him behind his back, or to others before him. And, 1. Her words to himself should neither be sharp, fullen, passionate, nor rude, careless or contemptuous: such as shew neither anger, nor neglect, but all lowliness and quietness of affection. What kind of words would you dislike from a servant or child? Those must you not give your husband. For the same duty of fear is in the same words, and with the same plainness enjoined to thee that it is to them. Indeed a wife, as I observed before, may be more familiar: yet there is an excess of familiarity which is blameworthy. Why should a woman be so over bold as to call her husband, Tom, Dick, Ned? Could she speak otherwise to her child or servant? Certainly those speeches of her's which are most familiar, should still have a print of reverence upon them.

5. Her words also to others in his presence should be such as witness a due reverence to him. In his company she should be more cautious of her behaviour to any, than otherwise she need to be. Her words to children or servants in his sight, ought not to be loud or snappish. If she perceive a fault in them, she should remember her better stands by, and therefore not speak, but upon necessity, and then utter the reproof in a milder manner, than she might have done in his absence. You allow not your children or servants to be loud before you. And will you be so before your husband!

6. A
6. A wife's words likewise concerning her husband behind his back, should be dutiful and respectful. She must not talk of him with a kind of carelessness, much less with reproachful terms. Hence the Apostle recommends the example of Sarah: who when she but thought of her husband, in the absence of all company, (Gen. xviii: 12.) reverently entitled him, My Lord. Who would bear a child speaking against his father behind his back? And shall it be thought sufferable in a wife? He that allows not an evil thought of the prince, will not allow evil speeches of the husband.

7. Yea, the very gestures and countenance of a wife, as well as her words, should be mixed with reverence. Both good and bad tempers have more ways of uttering themselves than by the tongue. Solomon speaks of an "eye that despiseth his mother:" so the eye of a wife may be a despising eye, and her gestures may proclaim contempt, though her tongue be altogether silent. But rude and contemptuous behaviour, are no less uncomely than disrespectful words. Wherefore, if you condemn these in your children toward yourself, allow them not in yourself toward your husband.

8. The second duty, Subjection, implies obedience to his commands, and submission to his reproofs. The former is expressly enjoined in those words, "Let the wife be subject to her husband in all things." And indeed, if she refuse it to him, how can she require it of the children and servants? For it is due to her only as his deputy, and a substitute under him. "But how far must she be subject to him?" The Apostle tells us, "In all things, in the Lord."
Lord. Obedience, you see, must be universal - only so that it may be in the Lord. In every thing wherein obedience to him would not prove rebellion against her Maker, she is bound to obey without any farther question. An English subject is not bound to obey the King in any thing but what some law enjoins. His will is no law, neither does it bind the conscience of his subject. But the husband's will is a law to his wife, and binds her conscience in all things indifferent. Nor does even this suffice, unless she obey readily, quietly, cheerfully, without brawling, contending, sowing.

9. The latter, submission to his reproofs, is also plainly required in these words, "As the church is subject to Christ, so must the wives to their own husbands in every thing." Now bearing his reproofs is doubtless a necessary part of the church's subjection to Christ. Of consequence it is a necessary part of the wife's subjection to her husband.

CHAP. VII.

Some Application of the whole.

1. AND first, This yields a good instruction to young, unmarried people, not to rush unadvisedly into this state. A thing of so difficult a nature, should not be hastily undertaken. If they get not first their hearts full of grace, and their heads full of wisdom, they will find their hands full of work, an house full of trouble, and a life full of woe. Dost thou desire to be married? Unless thou wouldst meet
meet with gall instead of honey, see what wisdom, what patience, what grace fit to govern, or fit to obey, thou findest in thyself. Get these against thou comest to use them, or marriage will yield thee small contentment. Vain youths will marry, before they have any power to practice, any understanding to know their duties. But he that leaps over a broad ditch with a short staff, will fall into the midst; and he that enters into marriage without great grace, shall fall into disquietude and vexation. Let unmarried people think of this, and be wise, before pain teaches them wisdom.

2. Secondly, I advise all married persons to be well acquainted with these duties, and to mark their own failings therein. Let the wife know her's, the husband his, and both, the common duties. I desire they would each observe their own, and not each the other's failings. Indeed it may be feared, many will be the worse for what has been said, because they heard amiss. The husband may perhaps ring his wife a peal concerning her duty, and tell her how her faults were ripped up; and yet never consider his own. The wife may tell him of his faults, when she has little or nothing to say of herself. Thus both will be worse, while they seek to upbraid each other, and not each to amend one. Unwise man! Unwise woman! Why hast thou not the greatest care, to save thy own soul? Couldst thou mark what was good for another's disease, and not what was good for thy own? Brethren, sisters, let this be altered in us. If thou be an husband, have more care to know that, for which thy own soul must answer, than what lies to the account
account of another. So thou that art a wife.

And woe to that man or woman, who sees not more failings in him or herself, than in the yoke-fellow. If thy heart were right, thy own sins would be more grievous, and thy yoke-fellow's less. Learn, therefore, to pass by their failings more easily, and be more censorious toward thy own. Learn to judge thyself. He never yet learned to work well at any work, that would cast his eyes more upon his neighbour's fingers, than upon his own. But oh! how common is this! Every man would be a good husband, if his wife were not so bad! And she would be a good wife, if her husband were tolerable. All the accusations, all the judgings, are darted at each other: but what folly is this? Idle man or woman, it is not the requiring duty from another, but the performing what belongs to thyself, that will make a christian, that will comfort thee in temptation, rejoice thee in death, and stand for thee in judgment.

3. In a word: Know thy own duty, mark thy own failings, and thou wilt not quarrel with thy yoke-fellow. There is no better means of peace, than for every one to learn his own work, and labour to mend his own faults. Have you then both been to blame? Repent both, and strain not courtesy which shall begin. Hast thou been a foolish, passionate, or an unkind husband? Not regarding thy wife's good? Cry not, "She has been thus and thus," but repent of thy own sin. Seriously confess it to God. Beseech him to make thee a better husband, that she may be a better wife. Hast thou been a brawling, disobedient, or discontented wife?
wife? Ask thy heart before God, and dissemble, not. If so, clamour not against thy husband, exclaim not against his passion or unkindness; but condemn thyself, and call upon God, to make thee reverence and obey thy husband, as a commander under him. Intreat him to make thee a better wife, that he may be a better husband. Let each mend one, I mean himself, and contention will cease. Pray each for yourself first, then for the other: labour to see wherein you yourself have offended; be not skilful to cast the fault upon another, but to cast it out of yourself. So shall your loves be sure, your lives comfortable, your deaths happy, and your memories blessed for ever.

4. Before I conclude, it may not be improper to sum up the duty of married persons, as parents and as masters. Their duty, as parents, respects either the temporal or the spiritual good of their children. With regard to the former, you owe them protection, and provision of necessaries, according to that rank and degree, wherein the wisdom of God has placed you. You are carefully to protect your children from all the evils and dangers, to which infancy, childhood, and youth are exposed. You are also to nourish and sustain them; not only to provide for them for the present, but to take care for their future subsistence. If you have not a patrimony to leave them, it behoves you to leave them an art or calling, whereby thro' diligence, with the blessing of God, they may procure food convenient for them. In the choice of this calling, you should chiefly have an eye to their general Christian calling, and consider not so much, what will conduct most
to their temporal profit or honour, as what will most effectually advance their spiritual, and eternal interest. This is a weighty point: it were well, if all parents would deeply lay it to heart. It should next be considered, whether the calling proposed be suitable to their genius and inclination; which are to be consulted on this head, only not as much as their eternal welfare.

5. With regard to their spiritual good, your first labour of love is, to present them to God in baptism. You are then to inure them to good, to instruct and admonish them, to educate them in the knowledge and fear of God, to season their minds as early as possible with the fundamental truths of religion, and in such a manner as is best suited to their capacity, to train them up in all holiness. Every instruction should be seconded by example. Let them continually see, as well as hear, how they ought to walk acceptably, and to please God. Be peculiarly careful to set before your children the copies and patterns of the virtues, which you teach. And let them neither see nor hear anything from you, which you would not desire to have copied by them. Even an heathen, and none of the most virtuous, could say,—*Maxima debeter pueris reverentia*. We ought to reverence and stand in awe of children, that nothing may be spoken or done in their sight, which may taint their tender minds. They are prone to imitate any: but more especially those who are so nearly related to them. Which undoubtedly they will be most ready to do, when example strikes in with their natural propensity to evil.

6. If
If neither good examples nor instructions will prevail, then correction becomes a duty. And this should first be given in words, before you proceed to severer methods: yet not in railing, or foul or bitter language, but in calm and sober reproof. If that fail too, then use the rod. But whenever this correction is given, let it be with all the expressions of love and concern, which the nature of the thing will admit. Let it be timely, before ill habits are contracted, at least, before they have room to take root. And let it be moderate, not exceeding the quality of the fault, or the tendernefs of the child. Immoderate, or ill-natured and passionate correction, is so far from profiting children, that it very frequently frets and sharpens their spirits, and makes them more stubborn and untractable. If they are of a softer temper, it frights and dispirits them. This is also a natural effect, of a sour, harsh, unkind behaviour. Hence those solemn cautions of the Apostle, Fathers, provoke not your children to wrath, (Eph. vi. 4.) Avoid whatever tends thereto. Use no demeanor, no actions or words, or way of speaking, which has such a tendency. And again, Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged, Col. iii. 21. It is a different word from that used in the former text. Μὴ δὲ τακμεῖτε Ν Δὲ δοκεῖτε Do not purposely fret or tease them; lest you should dishearten them too much, lest you should destroy their courage and vigour of mind, and make them of a faint, fearful, daftardly spirit. The direction doubtless belongs to both the parents, but is more immediately address to fathers, as they are generally of rougher and harsher spirits than the mothers,
mothers, and not so much restrained by natural fondness. Lastly, correction must not be given in anger; if it be, it will lose its effect on the child, who will think he is corrected, not because he has done a fault, but because the parent is angry.

7. These directions chiefly relate to young children. But even after they are grown up, you are still engaged, to watch over their souls, to observe how they practise the precepts, which have been inculcating upon them from time to time, and to exhort, encourage, and reprove them accordingly. You are also to bless them, first by your prayers. Parents are under a peculiar obligation, by daily and earnest prayer to commend their children to God's protection and blessing. You are, secondly, to bless them by your piety. See that you be such persons in all holiness of conversation, that from you the blessing of God may descend upon your posterity.

8. As masters, you are, 1. To be just to your servants, whether apprentices, journeymen, or household servants, in faithfully and exactly performing the conditions on which they engaged to serve you: particularly, with regard to food, and the other necessaries and conveniencies of life. You are, 2. To admonish and reprove them for their faults, more especially faults against God. But let this be done with all tenderness and mildness: forbearing not only bitter and approbrious language, but even threatening, knowing that your master is in heaven, and that there is no respect of persons with him. You are, 3. To set a good example to your servants; otherwise reproving will be but lost labour. It
DIRECTIONS TO CHILDREN. 197

is your duty, 4. To provide them with all means of necessary instruction, and to allow them sufficient time to worship God in private as well as in public. You are, 5. To beware that you give them only reasonable and moderate commands, that you do not make their service toilsome to them, by laying on them greater burdens than they can bear, or greater than you would impose, or they would bear, if they were not of the household of faith. Lastly, You are to encourage them in well-doing, by using them with that kindness, which their faithfulness, diligence, and piety deserve: in all your dealings with them, remembering, you are to give an account to your Master of the usage of your meanest servant.

DIRECTIONS TO CHILDREN.

CHILDREN, says the Apostle writing to the Ephesians, (chap. vi. ver. 1.) Obey your parents in the Lord. To which he adds, Honour thy father and mother, which is the first commandment with promise, (with a particular promise annexed; for the promise annexed to the second commandment, does not belong to the keeping that command in particular, but the whole law: that it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live upon the earth. And this promise is by no means to be confined to the time of the Jewish dispensation. On the contrary, there are not wanting many instances, even in later times, of persons eminently dutiful to their parents, who have been rewarded with eminent health.
DIRECTIONS TO CHILDREN.

health and prosperity. Though still it is acknowledged, that this promise, as most others, may be understood under the Christian dispensation, in a spiritual and more exalted sense.

2. But how are children to honour their fathers and mothers? First, by reverencing them. This is an unquestionable duty, manifestly contained in the very term Honour. And this inward reverence is to appear, in the whole outward behaviour. It is to be expressed both in their speeches and gestures, in their words and actions. Their speech should always testify honour, giving them the most respectful titles which their condition will bear. Likewise (unless on some peculiar occasions) your words before them should be few. For talkativeness before any person, has the appearance of disrespect. You should also comfort yourself with all lowliness and modesty, while in the presence of your parents: so that your whole carriage may be the natural expression of the respect lodged in your hearts.

3. This reverence is not to be with-held, on account of either their supposed or real infirmities. For be the faults of the parents ever so great, this gives the children no authority to despise them: seeing whatever their tempers or their behaviour be, they are your parents still. Neither are you to take any step which might cause others to despise them. You cannot therefore mention their faults to others, without bringing guilt upon your own soul. You cannot mention them behind their back, and be guiltless. It is your part to conceal all their faults and infirmities, to the uttermost of your power.
DIRECTIONS TO CHILDREN. 

1. Be not like Ham, who betrayed his father's nakedness, and was cursed of God to his latest posterity. Rather imitate the piety of Japhet and Shem: cover with all care whatever you disapprove of in a parent. Hide it from every one else, and, if it were possible, even from yourself.

4. A second duty which children owe to their parents is love. We are to bear them a deep, real kindness, and earnest, tender good-will, heartily desiring all manner of good to them, and abhorring to speak or do any thing, which might give them uneasiness. This will appear no more than common gratitude, if we remember, what our parents have done for us. That they were the instruments not only of bringing us into the world, but also of sustaining us after: and certainly they that weigh the cares and fears which attend the bringing up of a child, will judge the love of the child to be but a moderate return for them. This love is to be express'd several ways. First, in all kindness of behaviour carrying ourselves, not barely with awe and respect, but with tenderness and affection. It is to be express'd, secondly, in praying for them. The debt which a child owes to a parent, is so inconceivably great, that he can never hope, fully to discharge it himself. He is therefore to seek the assistance of God, and continually to beg him that has all power in heaven and earth, to return whatever good his parents have done him, seven-fold into their own bosom.

5. A third duty which children owe to their parents, is obedience. As this is plainly implied in the fifth commandment, so it is expressly
DIRECTIONS to CHILDREN.

presently enjoined by the Apostle: "Children obey your parents in the Lord." (Eph. vi. 1.)

And again, "Children obey your parents in all things: for this is well-pleasing to the Lord." (Col. iii. 20)

We owe them obedience in all things, unless where their commands are contrary to the commands of God. In every thing of an indifferent nature, whatever they enjoin, we are to do. The case is the same with regard to the authority of parents over their children, as with regard to that of husbands over their wives. The will of your parent is a law to you, as soon as it is signified to you. You are to comply with it immediately, not for wrath, not only to avoid this, but also for conscience sake. Such is the will of God concerning you: so high is the authority which he hath entrusted them with.

6. And yet we are to obey them only in the Lord: only so far as consists with his authority over us. Therefore, if any of their commands are contrary to the commands of God, in that case our duty to God must be preferred. If therefore any parent should be so wicked, as to require his child to steal, to lie, or to do any thing unlawful, the child offends not against his duty, though he disobey that command. Nay, he must disobey; otherwise he offends against an higher duty, even that which every child of man owes to his Father which is in heaven. Yet when it is necessary to refuse obedience, it should be done in so modest and respectful a manner, that it may plainly appear, not stubbornness, but conscience is the ground of that refusal. Let this appear likewise by your ready and cheerful compliance with all their lawful com-
DIRECTIONS to CHILDREN. 201

commands: as well knowing, that wherever the command of a parent is not contrary to any command of God, there the child is in conscience bound to obey, whether in a weightier or a lighter matter.

7. Nothing therefore but the unlawfulness of their command, can excuse the disobeying our parents. If any instance of disobedience is more inexcusable than others, it is the marrying against, or even without their consent. Indeed, parents have so peculiar a right to their children, that to give themselves away without their allowance, is not only an high act of disobedience, but of flagrant injustice. And hence we see, that among God’s antient people, if a young woman had even made a vow, she was not suffered to perform it, without the consent of the parent, (Numb. xxx. 5.) Indeed children ought to have a negative voice, and not be compelled to marry without their own consent. But if they marry without the consent of their parents, let them expect no blessing from God.

8. A fourth duty which children owe to their parents, is the assiling them in their wants, of what kind forever they be, whether sickness or weakness of body, decay of understanding, or lowness of estate. In all these the child is bound to assist them according to his ability. For the two former, weakness of body and infirmity of mind, none can doubt of the duty, when they remember how every child did in his infancy receive the same benefits from his parents. The child had then no strength to support, no understanding to guide itself. But the care of the parent supplied both these: and therefore in common gratitude, when either of these becomes the
the parent's case, the child is to perform the same office again. Likewise, as to the relieving their poverty, it is but just to sustain thy parents, who formerly sustained thee. And that this is also implying "honouring our father and mother," our Lord himself teaches. For when he accuses the pharisees of "rejecting the commandment of God, that they might cleave to their own traditions, he instances in this particular, concerning the relieving of parents. Hence it is manifest, this is a part of the duty, which is enjoined in the fifth commandment. And such a duty it is, that no pretence whatever can release us from the performance of it. This should be carefully observed. No fault of the parent can acquit a child of this duty. For as S. Peter tells servants, that they must be subject, out of conscience toward God, not only to good and gentle masters, but also to the froward: so certainly it concerns children, to perform every instance of filial duty, not only to kind and virtuous parents, but to the hardest and wickedest. For though gratitude to a kind and tender parent, be a forcible motive to make a child pay his duty, yet that is not the principal, and much less the only ground for it. This is laid in the authority of God, who commands us to honour our parents. And therefore, were we to suppose a parent to have been so unnatural, as never to have done any thing to oblige a child, yet notwithstanding this, the commandment of God would remain in its full force: and what is prescribed therein we are bound to perform, whether the tie of gratitude be added or no.

DIREC-
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS.

1. St. Paul confirms his directions to masters by that consideration, that they also "have a master in heaven, and there is no respect of persons with him." He regards no man's outward condition: the poor and the rich are the same to him, and the servant is as his master. And the Apostle, it seems, had learned of him, to be "without respect of persons." For he has the same care for servants, as for their masters, and is as large in his advices to them: nay, much more so; probably considering, that they had fewer advantages of education, and fewer opportunities of instruction. He is therefore remarkably particular in his directions to these, which are given at large in the epistle to the Ephesians, and to the Colossians. He gives them farther directions in the first epistle to Timothy, and again in the epistle to Titus. If we add hereto the advices given them by St. Peter, we shall have a full account of the duties of Christian servants.

2. The great duty required of all servants is, subjection or obedience to their masters. So St. Peter, (1 Pet. ii. 18.) Servants, be subject to your masters;" St. Paul, "Exhorts servants to be subject to their own masters:" and again both to the Ephesians and Colossians, (Eph. vi. 5. Col. iii. 22.) "Servants, obey your masters after the flesh." Allowing that these are your masters only in a qualified sense, and only during this state of flesh and blood; allowing you have but one proper, absolute master, to whom you owe unlimited subjection; yet to these also, as
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS.

as being invested with a part of his power, you owe a limited obedience and subjection.

3. Indeed this obedience varies according to the various kinds of service, wherein servants are connected with their masters. The sorts of servants most common among us are, 1. Labourers, or workmen, with whom we agree by the day, to do such work at such a price, and who accordingly serve us during that time. 2. Journeymen, whom we agree with for a longer space, to assist us in our calling, on such conditions. 3. Household servants, who usually contract by the year, to perform, on the considerations specified, either some particular branch of household work, or (if there be only one servant) all manner of work whatever, that from time to time is needful to be done in the family. 4. Apprentices, who are engaged for several years, chiefly to serve their masters in their particular trade or calling. Now, how far are all or any of these obliged in conscience, to "obey, and be subject to their own masters?"

4. The Apostle answers. During the time agreed, "Obey your masters after the flesh in all things:" that is, in all things specified in that agreement, which was made, when you entered into service. So a labourer, or workman is, during this short service, to follow the direction of him, that hired him. A journeyman is to do the same, with regard to that work, which he agreed to perform. Domestic servants (to whom particularly St. Peter speaks; for this is the proper meaning of of oixetos) are obliged to obey their master or mistress, either in one branch of household business, if they contracted for this, or otherwise with respect to the whole work.
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS.

work of the house: doing every thing at such times, and in such a manner, as is appointed by their superior. And an apprentice is to obey, according to the terms of his indenture, where in it is usually agreed, by his parents or friends, in what kind of service he shall be employed, according to the discretion of his master.

5. To sum up this. The first part of a servant's obedience, is, to forbear doing things of his own head, without or against the consent of his master: the reason whereof is plain. During the time of his service, he is not his own; neither ought the things he does to be for himself. Both his person and his actions are all his master's; and the will of his master is his rule. In particular, servants, 1. May not go whither they will, but only where they are ordered, or, at least, permitted to go. 2. They ought not to do their own business. When Jacob was Laban's servant, tho' he had flocks of his own, yet he fed his master's flocks, and committed his own to his sons, Gen. xxx. 35, 36. 3. They are not to do what business they please themselves, but what is allotted them by their master. 4. They ought not to marry, while the time of their service lasts, without the consent of their master. 5. They may not, before their covenanted time expir'd, go away from their master.

6. The second part of a servant's obedience, is, to do whatever his master commands. To "look to the hand of his master, (as David speaks) ready to execute any thing he would have done. He is also to obey, by hearkening

* Several of the following paragraphs are partly extracted from Mr. Gouge on Domicile Duties.
to his instructions, not only in matters of his secular calling, but likewise in the things of God, in whatever concerns his christian calling.

7. The manner, wherein this obedience is to be performed, is largely declared by both the Apostles. "Obey your masters, (faith St. Paul,) with fear and trembling." This indeed is not to be taken literally: it is a proverbial expression, denoting the utmost care, watchfulness, and diligence. Do it fearing God; from a principle of loving fear, a fear of offending your Master, who is in heaven. "Be subject to your masters with all fear," faith St. Peter, with earnest, tender reverence: with a constant fear, either of injuring, grieving, or displeasing them, by any part of your behaviour.

8. So * proper is this fear of his master in a servant, that the want of it is a denial of his master's place and power. This God intimates in that expostulation, (Mal. i. 6.) "If I be a master, where is my fear?" That is, you plainly shew, you do not account me your master, because there is no fear of me in your heart. But wherever it is, it will draw servants on to perform all duty. And the more it abounds, the more desire and endeavour there will be to do all things well.

9. An especial means to create and preserve this fear is, a due consideration of the ground of their master's place and power: which is, the appointment of God. God has placed them in his stead, and in part given them his power. They are the deputies and ministers of God: and therefore in scripture, the title Lord, is after a peculiar manner, given them. There can there-
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS.

fore be no excuse for despising them, though they should be poor, mean, weak, or aged. The poorest and weakest have the same place and authority, which the richest and strongest have. All bear the image of God: therefore, to despise them, shews, that you regard not God's image at all.

10. This fear may be shewn either in speech or behaviour: in the former, 1. By sparing to speak in the presence of their master, without some necessary cause: 2. By forbearing to reply, when they observe their masters unwilling they should speak any more: 3. By attending to what their masters speak: shewing such a respect to them, as Samuel did to God, when he said, "Speak; for thy servant heareth." When they have just occasion to speak, this fear may be shewn, 1. By giving proper titles to their masters. 2. By not talking more than the occasion requires. 3. By speaking in a meek and humble manner. 4. By choosing a fit season, both when he is at leisure to hear, and when his mind is calm, not troubled with any passion: and lastly, By giving a present and ready answer, to whatever their master says to them.

11. Servants should shew a due fear of their masters in their behaviour, 1. By such dutiful and submissive obeisance, as becomes their sex and place, according to the custom of the country and place where they are, when they have occasion to come to them, to go from them, or to receive any charge of them. 2. By standing in his master's presence. 3. By uncovering their heads before him, and 4. By sobriety and modesty both in countenance and in the whole carriage. And from the same principle
principle you should endeavour "to please them well in all things," (Tit. ii. 9.) Do every thing in the most obliging manner. If it be possible, please them in every thing: study to give them satisfaction in whatever you do. Do it in the way which they like best: labour that your whole service, your whole behaviour, may be acceptable to them. And do all this with good-will, (Eph. vi. 7.) with cordial benevolence, with love to them, springing from love to God: with an earnest desire to make their lives as easy and happy and comfortable as you can.

12. Yet all this time, beware that you do not act as men-pleasers, as having no further design than to please men, to gain their approbation or esteem, to be well-thought of and well-spoken of; or to acquire any temporal advantage which may result from their favour or good-will. Serve not with eye-service, (a certain consequence of serving as men-pleasers,) but do just the same in the absence of your master, as you do when under his eye. Let his absence or presence make no difference in your industry and activity. You may examine yourself by this rule: there is no surer guard against self-deceit. Do I labour in the very same manner at other times, as when my master is looking on? If I do not, I am no better than a man-pleaser, I am a vile eye-servant in the sight of God.

13. An infallible way of avoiding this, is to obey them with singleness of heart, that is, without any temporal motive, with a single eye, with the one view of pleasing God. The Apostle insists upon this over and over, and that in the strongest manner. "Obey your masters in the
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS. fingleness of your heart as unto Christ, not with eye-service, but as the servants of Christ, doing service unto the Lord, not unto men.” And again, “Servants, obey your masters in all things, with singleness of heart: and whatsoever ye do, do it as unto the Lord, not unto men.” “For” in whatsoever you do with a single eye, “ye serve the Lord, Christ.” Whatever is thus done to an earthly master, he accounts done unto himself. And for all this, he will say to you in that day, “Well done, good and faithful servants: inasmuch as ye have done it to one of these, for my sake, ye have done it unto me.”

14. Therefore in all things which ye do for your masters, consider yourselves as “doing the will of God.” The will of your master is the will of God to you. His voice is, as it were, the voice of God. His work is to you the work of God, whom you obey in obeying him. But in all this there is one restriction to be observed: masters as well as parents, are to be obeyed only in the Lord: only so far as their commands are not contrary to the commands of God. If ever this should be the case, you cannot obey them: you must obey God rather than man. You must humbly and respectfully declare, that in all things else you are ready to obey: but that this you apprehend to be contrary to the plain word of God, and therefore you dare not do it. Neither may you refrain from obeying a plain command of God, because your master forbids you so to do. You must at some times, (if not so often as you otherwise would) hear the word of God, join in public prayer, attend the table of the Lord, and call upon him in private.

S. 3 And
And if any master violently hinders you from doing, you should at all hazards quit his service as soon as possible. Let no gain, no temporal consideration whatever, induce you to continue therein. For "what is a man profited, if he should gain the whole world, and lose his own soul."

15. But "whatsoever ye do," that is not contrary to the commands of God, "do it heartily, from your soul," your whole soul, from the bottom of your heart. This naturally results from the "doing it as unto the Lord," and is therefore twice mentioned in the same sentence with it. Whatever you do, do it with your might, do it as quick as you can, and as well as you can. Do it at least as well as you would do, if it were for yourself. If you are hired by the day, do as much work in each day as you can. The custom of the trade is nothing to you, nor the example of those that work with you. Do as much to-day as you can without hurting yourself, or disabling you from doing the same to-morrow: and just as much as you would, if it were your own work, or if you were to be paid by the piece. Do the same thing, if you are an household servant; putting forth all your strength, ridding away all the business that you can, and using therein all the understanding which God has given you, in order to do every thing in the most excellent manner, whereof you are capable.

16. These general directions, all servants are to observe, of conscience toward God, and that whether their masters be good or bad, heathens, (in fact, if not in name) or christians. For the character of the master, while he is such, does not
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS.

not vacate the duty of the servant. Suppose they are mere heathens, men that neither love, nor fear, nor serve God, (a very possible case even in what we call a christian country;) still "let as many servants as are under the yoke (for the service of these is a yoke indeed) count their masters worthy of all honour."* Tho' they are unbelieving and unholy, yet in consideration of the place which God has assigned them, for his sake, and in obedience to his appointment, "count them worthy of all the honour" above described. Pay them all the reverence in your heart, and shew them all that outward respect, both in word and action, "that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed" by those ungodly men, who would not fail to lay the blame of your neglect, on the religion which you profess. On the other hand, "as many as have faithful masters," real believers in Christ, let not this administer any pretence, for less exactness in their duty. "Let them not despise them, because they are brethren. Let them not on this account abate any thing of the inward reverence they owe, or of their outward respect and obedience. "But rather do them service," observing the preceding directions with regard to them, more earnestly and exactly, "because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit;" enjoying the same communion with God on earth, and looking for the same inheritance in heaven.

17. But besides these general ones, there are several particular directions given by the Apostle to all christian servants. As I. "Be honest,

* 1 Tim. vi. 1.
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS.

not purloining," (Tit. ii. 10.) not secreting, or privately keeping back any thing for yourself: not taking, using, disposing, or giving away the least thing belonging to thy master, without his leave, without his knowledge and consent first asked and obtained. To do otherwise is no better than plain theft, and cuts off all pretensions to honesty. Equally dishonest it is to hurt or waste any thing, or to let it be lost thro' their carelessness or negligence. Whatever therefore your fellow-servants do, keep yourself pure: and let not the custom of the world, but the word of God, be the rule of all your actions.

18. Secondly, "Be true;" not barely, tell no wilful lie, either to your master or your fellow-servants, but let "all your conversation be in simplicity, and godly sincerity." Even if you are overtaken in a fault, use no deceit, no equivocating or prevarication to hide it, or to excuse either yourself or any of your fellow-servants, or prevent anger that may ensue. Herein also St. Peter observes, "Christ left you an example, that you might tread in his steps." "He not only did," committed "no sin, but there was no guile found in his mouth." Let there be none found in yours: in spite of all temptations to the contrary, "speak the truth from your heart," and whatever inconveniences spring herefrom, God will turn them all into blessings.

19. Thirdly, "Be faithful:" As St. Paul expresses it, "shew all good fidelity," Tit. ii. 10. This is good, beautiful, honourable in all men. It ennobles the lowest station, and causes it to shine in the eyes of God and man. Be faithful, 1. With regard to your master’s goods. Preserving, yea, and increasing them to the utmost
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS.

To the term of your power. Whatever is committed to your trust, whether within doors or without, so carefully preserve, that it be not lost, spoiled, or impaired under your hands. If you see any damage done to your master's goods, redress it yourself, if you can: If you cannot, immediately make it known to your master, that he may find means of redressing it. And not only preserve, but do all that in you lies, to increase you master's goods. The talents which were committed to the faithful servants, were by their industry increased to as many more. So that it is not sufficient, not to lessen your master's substance, but you should labour to better it. Study his interest as you would your own, and promote it by all possible means. Regard not your pleasure, your ease, nor any thing but your conscience, in comparison of it. Be faithful, 2. With regard to his reputation. Conceal his faults and infirmities as far as possible. Some of these you can hardly avoid observing, being continually under his roof. But whatever you observe of this kind, keep it in your own breast. Let it go no farther; reveal it not to strangers, no, not even to your fellow-servants. Never make either his supposed or real failings, the subject of your discourse. Beware you do not wound him behind his back, nor suffer others to do it in your presence. Endure no tatling or tale-bearing concerning him in the family, but prevent or stop it with all diligence. Whenever you can do it consistently with truth, and so far as you can, defend him. And in every point, be just as tender of his character as of your own. To this head may be referred, faithfulness in keeping the secrets of your master.
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS.

Many of these you cannot but know, by reason of the close connexion which is between you, your continually abiding so near together, and the many employments he has for you. All these therefore you are carefully to conceal, provided they tend not to the dishonour of God, or to the danger of the church or commonwealth, or indeed of any private person. For Jonathan is commended for discovering the mischief which Saul had secretly intended against David, 1 Sam. xx. 12. Be faithful, 3. With regard to his soul. With all the plainness which your station allows, and yet with all respect and humility "rebuke, and suffer not sin upon him." The time, the manner, and the other circumstances relating to this difficult task, God will give you to chuse aright, if your eye be single, and you seek his discretion by earnest prayer.

20. Fourthly, "Be patient." In your patience "possessing your souls," steadily follow the preceding directions, and be thus subject, not only to the good and gentle masters, but also to the froward: to those, who are neither good nor gentle, who have neither religion nor good-nature; that it may appear, you do your service unto the Lord, and not unto men. But it may be proper, in the mean time, to observe, that the state of English servants is widely different from the state of those, to whom St. Paul and St. Peter wrote. Many of those, (perhaps the greater part were slaves) who, by the miserable constitution of their country, were the absolute property of their master, as much as were his sheep and oxen. Therefore, it was not in their power to leave or change their master, but they
DIRECTIONS TO SERVANTS: 215
were constrained to stay with them till death. Consequently, those directions were peculiarly necessary for those, who were in such a situation: "This is thank worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? But if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God," 1 Pet. ii. 19, 20. But to those, who are born under an happier constitution, undoubtedly the first advice should be, "If thou mayst be free," from a froward, ill-natured man, then use it rather. Do not bind yourself at all, if you can honestly avoid it, (as you generally may) to any, who you have reason to believe is an unjust, or an unmerciful man. And if you are bound to such an one already, yet if you should "suffer wrongfully" from him, "if you do well," and suffer notwithstanding, it is by no means your duty to endure it. Rather it is your duty to appeal to the magistrate, who is the minister of God to thee for good, and to desire of him such a remedy, as the laws of your country allow. In this manner "commit yourself," and your cause "to him, that judgeth righteously." But even in this case, till you are free from the unrighteous man, remember the example (Christ hath left: "Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not." How much more should you tread in these his steps, with regard to things of smaller moment, with regard to those inconsiderable instances either of injustice or unkindness, which are to be expected almost in every family, and for which even our laws
DIRECTIONS to SERVANTS.

Laws provide no remedy? Here undoubtedly you are called to suffer: And see that you do so with all meekness and gentleness. Not only "when you are reviled, revile not again, but answer not again," Tit. ii. 10. Open not your mouth, unless silence might have the appearance of fullness or disrespect: and then do it in as few words, as the matter will bear, and with all the softness you are master of.

21. Before he closes the subject, St. Paul does not fail to remind you, what great encouragement you have, to persevere in all these duties of your station, whatever difficulties you meet with therein. For hereby you "may adorn the gospel of God our Saviour in all things." So strong an expression is scarce to be found in all the writings of the Apostle, when he speaks to persons of the highest rank, as he here uses to men of low degree. You therefore are peculiarly called of God, to be an honour to your profession, your general profession of Christians; to shew what manner of men they are, who serve the Lord Christ: See then that you in particular walk circumspectly, accurately, exactly, that either your unbelieving masters may be won by your conversation, or at least believers confirmed and comforted.

22. Still further encouragement you have in "knowing, that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance"; that inheritance reserved for you in heaven, which is of infinitely greater value, than any which your master now enjoys, or any which you can receive on earth. You know that the day is coming, when your common master will descend in the clouds of heaven. And you are assured, in that day, "What-
"whosoever good thing a man hath done," while he was "serving God in his generation, the same shall he receive from the Lord, whether he be bond or free: The same"—that is, a reward proportionable thereto, in an additional degree of glory. Therefore, let nothing be wanting now. "Work your work betimes, and in his time he will give you your reward." Now be honest, be true, be faithful, be patient. Now "obey your masters with fear, yea, with fear and trembling." Do them service with singleness of heart, with good-will, with your whole soul. Do this for the honour of the gospel, for the glory of God your Saviour, for the present good of your own soul, and for the increase of your eternal inheritance.
THOUGHTS ON CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

To The Christian Reader.

The following Tract is by no means designed to gratify the curiosity of any man. It is not intended to prove the doctrine at large, in opposition to those, who explode and ridicule it: No, nor to answer the numerous objections against it, which may be raised even by serious men. All I intend here is, simply to declare, what my sentiments are on this head: What Christian Perfection does (according to my apprehension) include, and what it does not, and to add a few practical observations and directions relative to the subject.

As these Thoughts were at first thrown together by way of question and answer, I let them continue in the same form, being as plain and familiar as any other. They are just the same, that I have entertained for above twenty years, tho' extremely different from what have been imputed to me; and probably will be so still: For there are many, who think they do God service by flandering their neighbour. Lord, lay not this sin to their charge! Open their eyes, that they sleep not in death!

Bristol,
Oct. 16, 1759.

John Wesley.

QUESTION.
QUESTION I.

WHAT is Christian Perfection?

Answer. The loving God with all our heart, mind, soul, and strength. This implies, that no wrong temper, none contrary to love, remains in the soul: And that all the thoughts, words, and actions, are governed by pure love.

Q. 2. But do you affirm that this Perfection excludes all infirmities, ignorance, and mistake?

A. I continually affirm quite the contrary, and always have done so. The Sermon on Christian Perfection was published above eighteen years ago. And therein I expressly declare, "Christians are not so perfect in this life, as to be free from ignorance." They know indeed in every circumstance of life, how "to keep a conscience void of offence." But innumerable are the things which they know not. So very little is the knowledge of the best of men.

"* No one then is so perfect in this life, as to be free from ignorance. Nor, secondly, from mistake, which indeed is almost an unavoidable consequence of it: Seeing those who know but in part, are very liable to err, touching the things which they know not. It is true, they do not mistake in things essential to salvation, but in things unessential, they do err, and that frequently. The best and wisest of men are frequently mistaken, even with regard to facts: Believing those things not to have been, which really were; or those to have been done, which were not.—And hence they may

judge, not according to truth with regard to the characters of men: And that, not only by supposing good men to be better, or wicked men to be worse than they are; but by believing them to have been, or to be good men, who were, or are very wicked: Or, perhaps, those who have been, or to be wicked men, who were, or are holy and unreprovable."—A proof that we are no more to expect any living man to be infallible than to be omniscient.

"If it be objected that St. John says (chap. ii. 20.) "Ye have an unction from the Holy One, and know all things:" The answer is plain: Ye know all things which are needful for your soul's health. That he never designed to extend this farther, is clear from the words that follow. "These things have I written unto you, concerning them that deceive you:" as well as from his frequently repeated caution, "Let no man deceive you:" Which had been altogether needless, had not the very persons who had this unction, been liable not to ignorance only, but to mistake also.

"Neither are the best of men free from infirmities.—I mean, all those inward and outward imperfections which are not of a moral nature. Such are weakness or slowness of understanding, dulness or confusedness of apprehension, incoherency of thought, irregular quickness or heaviness of imagination;—to which one might add a thousand nameless defects either in conversation or behaviour.

Q. 3. But is not this scheme contradictory to itself? "How can every thought, word and work be governed by pure love, and the man be subject at the same time to ignorance and mistake?"
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION. 221

This we think is not Christian Perfection, but Imperfection, and is not a pin different from Calvinism."

A. So one of my correspondents writes. But I see no argument therein. I see nothing contradictory here. "A man may be filled with pure love, and still be liable to mistake." Indeed I expect not to be free from actual mistakes, till this mortal puts on immortality. I believe this to be a natural consequence of the soul's dwelling in flesh and blood. For we cannot now think at all, but by the mediation of those bodily organs, which have suffered equally with the rest of our frame. And hence we cannot avoid sometimes thinking wrong, till "this corruptible shall have put on incorruption."

But we may carry this thought farther. A mistake in judgment may possibly occasion a mistake in practice. For instance: The mistake arising from prejudice of education in M. De Renty, concerning the nature of mortification, occasioned that practical mistake, his wearing an iron girdle. And a thousand such instances there may be, even in those who are in the highest state of grace. Yet where every word and action springs from love, such a mistake is not properly a sin. However, it cannot bear the rigour of God's Justice, but needs the atoning blood.

Q. 4. What was the judgment of all our brethren who met at Bristol in August, 1758, on this head?

A. It was expressed in these words. 1. Every one may mistake as long as he lives: 2. A mistake in opinion may occasion a mistake in practice:
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

practice: 3. Every such mistake is a transgression of the perfect law: 4. Therefore every such mistake, were it not for the blood of atonement, would expose to eternal damnation: 5. It follows, that the most perfect have continual need of the merits of Christ, even for their actual transgressions, and may well say for themselves, as well as their brethren, forgive us our trespasses.

This easily accounts for what otherwise might seem to be utterly unaccountable, namely, that they who are not offended when we speak of the highest degree of love, yet will not hear of living without sin. The reason is, they know all men are liable to mistake, and that in practice as well as in judgment. But they do not know, or not observe, that this is not sin, if love is the sole principle of action.

Q. 5. But still, if they live without sin, does not this exclude the necessity of a Mediator? At least, is it not plain, that they stand no longer in need of Christ in his priestly office?

A. Far from it. None feel their need of Christ like these; none so entirely depend upon him. For Christ does not give life to the soul, separate from, but in and with himself. Hence his words are equally true of all men, in whatever state of grace they are; "As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me; without [or separate] from me, ye can do nothing."

In every state, we need Christ in the following respects: 1. Whatever grace we receive, it is a free gift from him. 2. We receive it, as his purchase, merely in consideration of the price
price he paid. 3. We have this grace not only from Christ, but in him. For our perfection is not like that of a tree, which flourishes by the sap derived from its own root, but (as was said before) like that of a branch, which, united to the vine, bears fruit, but severed from it is dried up, and withered. 4. All our blessings, temporal, spiritual, and eternal, depend on his intercession for us; which is one great branch of his priestly office, of which therefore we have always equal need. 5. The best of men still need Christ in his priestly office, to atone for their omissions, their short-comings, (as some, not improperly, speak) their mistakes in judgment and practice, and their defects of various kinds. For these are all deviations from the perfect law, and consequently need an atonement. Yet that they are not properly sins, we apprehend may appear from the words of St. Paul, "He that loveth, hath fulfilled the law; for love is the fulfilling of the law," Rom. xiii. 10, 12. Now mistakes, and whatever infirmities necessarily flow from the corruptible state of the body, are no way contrary to love, nor therefore in the scripture sense, sins.

The truth is, In a state of perfection, every desire is in subjection to the obedience of Christ. The will is entirely subject to the will of God, and the affections wholly fixt on him. Now what motive can remain sufficient to induce such a person to a transgression of the law? Surely none that can induce him to do any thing that is formally evil; altho' he may thro' human infirmity, speak or do what is materially so, and as such condemned by the perfect law. And the soul, that any way deviates from this, would
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

would without an atonement be lost for ever. Yet these deviations are not properly sins. But if any will call them so, they may.

Q. 6. I am not yet clear on this head. Will you answer me a few questions? 1. "Is there any thing besides sin, that would expose to eternal damnation? 2. Is there any thing besides sin that needs the atoning blood? 3. Is there no such perfection in this life, as absolutely excludes all sin? 4. If we do not allow this, do we not contradict ourselves, in talking of sinless perfection? 5. Can a person be filled with the love of God, and yet be liable to sin, to transgress the perfect law? 6. How can we call such a transgression of the perfect law, as without the blood of atonement, would expose us to eternal damnation, any other than sin?"

A. The objection is here set in the strongest light. Let it be remembered, I do not intend in this tract, to prove the doctrine at large, but simply to declare, what my sentiments are.” This premised, I answer, 1. 2. Not only sin properly so called, that is, “a voluntary transgression of a known law,” but sin improperly so called, that is, “an involuntary transgression of a divine law, known or unknown,” needs the atoning blood, and without this would expose to eternal damnation. 3. I believe there is no such perfection in this life, as excludes these involuntary transgressions, which I apprehend to be naturally consequent on the ignorance and mistakes inseparable from mortality. 4. Therefore sinless perfection is a phrase I never use, lest it should seem to contradict myself. 5. I believe a person filled with the love of God, is still liable to these involuntary transgressions. 6. Such
6. Such transgressions you may call sins, if you please: I do not, for the reason above mentioned.

I would only add, Man in his original state, was not liable to these transgressions. He knew every law of God, in every possible case, and was able to obey it. Therefore any transgression must have exposed him to eternal damnation: and so would it every one of his posterity, but that the law of love, by virtue of the atoning blood, now stands in the room of the law of fire.

Q. 7. What advice would you give to those that do, and those that do not call them so?

A. Let those, who do not call them sins, never think that themselves, or any other persons, are in such a state, as that they can stand before Infinite Justice without a Mediator. This must either argue the deepest ignorance, or the highest arrogance and presumption.

Let those, who do call them so, beware how they confound these defects with sins, properly so called. But how will they avoid it? How will these be distinguished from those, if they are all promiscuously called sins? I am much afraid, if we should allow any sins to be consistent with Perfection, few would confine the idea to those defects, concerning which only the assertion could be true.

To sum up this point. "He that has no sin, you say, can need no atonement." If under the term sin, you comprize the above-mentioned defects, the assertion is true: but we maintain no such Perfection. But if by sin you mean a transgression of the law of love, the assertion is not true; for one, who has no sin in this sense, yet has many defects, which stand in need of
CHristian perfection: on which account also the blood of Christ is unspeakably precious to such a soul.

Q. 8. "I am not clear yet, how a liableness to mistake can consist with perfect love. Is not a person, who is perfected in love, every moment under its powerful influences? And can any mistake flow from pure love?"

A. I answer, 1. Many mistakes may consist with pure love. 2. Some may accidentally flow from it: I mean, love itself may incline us to mistake. The pure love of our neighbour, springing from the love of God, "thinketh no evil, believeth and hopeth all things." Now this very temper, unsuspicious, ready to believe and hope the best of all men, may occasion our thinking some men better than they really are.

Q. 9. "I am sure, to set perfection too high, is to make nothing of it. But is it not worse to set it too low?"

A. It cannot be worse, than "to make nothing of it:" But it is bad enough. Therefore let you and I steer between the two extremes, and set it just as high as the Scripture does. It is nothing higher and nothing lower than this, the pure love of God and man: The loving God with all our heart and soul, and our neighbour as ourselves. It is love governing the heart and life, running through all our temper, words and actions.

Q. 10. But if we must be saved from all our sins on earth, because no sin can enter into heaven, does it not follow, we must be saved from these defects on earth, because these cannot enter into heaven?

A. It
A. It will not; for the case is by no means parallel. These defects are the mere natural result of the present imperfect and corruptible state of the body. Consequently they must all drop off with the body; and so cannot affect the soul in its separate state, or hinder its access to God. But the case is not so with respect to sin. Pride and anger (for instance) or vile affections, tincture and defile the very essence of the soul, and make it incapable of that access. Nor can its separation from the body have any such effect as to separate these from the soul.

Q. 11. What do they who deny, and we who believe the attainableness of perfection, grant to each other?

A. They generally grant, 1. That it is attained in the article of death: 2. That till then it is not only possible, but our duty to come nearer and nearer to it: 3. That we ought to be continually praying for, and pressing after it.

We grant, 1. That many sincere persons do not attain it till a little before death. (And no wonder; for they do not expect it sooner, nor consequently pray in faith for it.) 2. That every believer is “born of God, a new creature, sanctified: Has a new heart, has Christ dwelling in him, and is a temple of the Holy Ghost.” 3. That the inspired writers rarely speak either of or to those, who were perfected in love, but almost continually of or to those who were in a justified state. That consequently it behoves us to speak in public, almost continually of a state of justification; and more rarely, at least,
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

least, in full and explicit terms, concerning the state of perfection.

The point wherein we divide is this: Should we expect to be saved from all sin before death?

Q. 12. Is there any clear promise in Scripture, that God will save us from all sin?

A. There is: Psalm cxxx. 8. "He shall redeem Israel from all his sins." Parallel to which are those declarations of St. John: "The blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all sin: "He is faithful and just to forgive our sins, and also to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."

This is more largely expressed in the prophecy of Ezekiel, chap. xxxvi. ver. 27, &c. "Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols will I cleanse you. I will also save you from all your uncleanliness:"

No words can be more clear and express. And to this, the Apostle probably refers in his exhortation to the Corinthians, "Having these promises, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God," 2 Cor. vii. 1. Equally clear and express is that ancient promise. "The Lord thy God will circumcise thy heart and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, Deut. xxx. 6.

Q. 13. Does any assertion answerable to this occur in the New Testament?

A. There does, and that laid down in the plainest terms. 1 John iii. 8. "For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might
might destroy the works of the devil: The works of the devil, without any limitation or restriction: Now all sin is the work of the devil. Parallel to which is that assertion of St. Paul, Eph. v. 25, 27. "Christ loved the church and gave himself for it, that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish."

And to the same effect is his assertion, Rom. viii. 3, 4. "God sent his Son, that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, walking not after the flesh, but after the spirit."

Prayers likewise and commands occur in the New Testament, which are equivalent to the strongest assertions.

First, Prayers for it, which were there no such thing, would be mere mockery of God. Such in particular are, 1. "Deliver us from evil, (or from the evil one." Now, when we are delivered from all evil, there can be no sin remaining. 2. "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also, who shall believe on me thro' their word: That they all may be one, as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one," John xvii. 20, 21, 23. 3. "I bow my knees unto the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ—that he would grant you—that ye being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all saints, what is the breadth and length, and depth, and height: And to know the love of Christ which passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled with all the fulness of God," Eph. iii. 14, 16,—19. 4.

Vol. IV. U
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

"The very God of peace sanctify you wholly. And I pray God, your whole spirit, soul and body, be preserved blameless, unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ," I Thes. v. 23.

Secondly, Commands. 1. "Be ye perfect, (which indeed is a promise likewise; and may full as well be rendered, ye shall be perfect:) as your Father which is in heaven is perfect," Matt. v. 48. 2. "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind." But if the love of God fill all the heart, there can be no sin there.

Q. 14. But how does it appear, that this is to be done before the article of death?

A. First, from the very nature of a command, which is not given to the dead, but to the living. Therefore, "thou shalt love God with all thy heart," cannot mean, thou shalt do this when thou diest, but while thou livest.

Secondly, from express texts of scripture.

1. "The grace of God that bringeth salvation, hath appeared to all men: teaching us, that having renounced ungodliness and worldly desires, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly," in this present world: "Looking for—the glorious appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity," Tit. ii. 11,—14.

2. "He hath raised up an horn of salvation for us,—to perform the oath which he sware to our Father Abraham, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, should serve him without fear, in holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life," Luke i. 69, &c.
Q. 15. Are any persons mentioned in scripture who had attained this?
A. Yes, St. John, and all those of whom he says, 1 Epist. iv. 7. “Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have confidence in the day of judgment, because as he is, so are we in this world.” If you ask, Why are there not more examples of this kind recorded in the New Testament? We answer, It does not become us, to be peremptory on this matter. One reason might possibly be, because the Apostles wrote, when the Church was in its infancy. Therefore they might mention such persons the more sparingly, lest they should give strong meat to babes.

Q. 16. Can you shew one such an example now? Where is he that is perfect?
A. To some who make this enquiry, one might say, “If I knew one here, I would not tell you. For you do not enquire out of love. You are like Herod. You only seek the young child to slay it.”

But more directly, we answer. There are numberless reasons, why there should be a few indisputable examples. What inconveniences would this bring on the person himself, set as a mark for all to shoot at? What a temptation might it be to others, not only to them that know not God, but to many believers? How hardly, if the matter were beyond all doubt, would they refrain from idolizing such a person? And yet how unprofitable would it be to gain-sayers? For if they hear not Moses and the Prophets, Christ and his Apostles, neither would they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.
Q. 17. Suppose, then, one had attained to this, would you advise him to speak of it?
A. At first perhaps he would scarce be able to refrain: The fire would be so hot within him: His desire to declare the loving kindness of the Lord, carrying him away like a torrent. But afterwards he might: And then it would be advisable, not to speak of it to them who know not God: It is most likely, it would only provoke them, to contradict and blaspheme. Nor to others, without some particular reason, without some particular good in view. And then he should have especial care to avoid all appearance of boastling: To speak with the deepest humility and reverence, giving all the glory to God. Meantime, let him speak more convincingly by his life, than he can do by his tongue.

Q. 18. But would it not be better to be entirely silent? Ought he to speak of it at all?
A. By silence he might avoid many crosses which will naturally and necessarily ensue, if he simply declare, even among believers, what God has wrought in his soul. If therefore such an one were to confer with flesh and blood, he would be entirely silent. But this could not be done with a clear conscience; for undoubtedly he ought to speak. Men do not light a candle to put it under a bushel: Much less does the all-wise God. He does not raise such a monument of his power and love, to hide it from all mankind. Rather he intends it as a general blessing, to those that are simple of heart. He designs thereby not barely the happiness of that individual person, but the animating and encouraging
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION. 233

couraging others, to follow after the same blessing. His will is, that many should see it and rejoice, and put their trust in the Lord. Nor does any thing under heaven more quicken the desires of those who are saved by faith, than to converse with those whom they believe to have experienced a still higher salvation. This places that salvation full in their view, and increases their hunger and thirst after it: An advantage which must have been entirely lost, had the person so saved, buried himself in silence.

Q. 19. But is there no way to prevent those crosses which usually fall on those who speak of being thus saved?

A. It seems they cannot be prevented altogether, while so much of nature remains even in believers. But something might be done, if the preacher in every place, would 1. Candidly and closely examine, and that again and again, those who speak thus: 2. Speak against none, till they have thus examined them: 3. Declare more or less openly, as the case requires, that such and such are not what they supposed; and 4. Labour to prevent the unjust or unkind treatment of those, in favour of whom there is reasonable proof.

Q. 20. What is reasonable proof? How can we certainly know one that is saved from all sin?

A. We cannot infallibly know one that is so saved, (no, nor even one that is justified) unless it should please God to endow us with the miraculous discernment of spirits. But we apprehend these would be sufficient rational proofs to any reasonable man, and such as would leave little
little room to doubt either of the truth or depth of the work, 1. If we had sufficient evidence of his exemplary behaviour for some time before this supposed change. This would give us reason to believe, he would not lie for God, but speak neither more nor less than he felt: 2. If he gave a distinct account of the time and manner wherein the change was wrought, with sound speech which could not be reproved: and, 3. If it appeared, that all his subsequent words and actions were holy and unblameable.

The short of the matter is this; 1. I have abundant reason to believe, this person will not lie: 2. He testifies before God, "I feel no sin, but all love: I pray, rejoice, give thanks without ceasing. And I have as clear an inward witness, that I am fully renewed, as that I am justified." Now if I have nothing to oppose to this plain testimony, I ought in reason to believe it.

It avails nothing to object, "But I know several things, wherein he is quite mistaken:" for it has been allowed, that all who are in the body are liable to mistake: and that a mistake in judgment may sometimes occasion a mistake in practice; (though great care is to be taken that no ill use be made in this concession.) For instance, even one that is perfected in love, may mistake with regard to another person, and may think him in a particular case, to be more or less faulty than he really is. And hence he may speak to him with more or less severity than the truth required. And in this sense, (though that be not the primary meaning of St. James,) "In many things we offend all."
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION. 235

This therefore is no proof at all that the person so speaking is not perfect.

Q. 21. But is it not a proof, if he is surprized or fluttered, by a noise, a fall, or some sudden danger?

A. It is not; for one may start, tremble, change colour, or be otherwise disordered in body, while the soul is calmly stayed on God, and remains in perfect peace. Nay, the mind itself may be deeply distrest, may be exceeding sorrowful, may be perplexed and press down by heavinesfs and anguish even to agony, while the heart cleaves to God by perfect love, and the will is wholly resigned to him. Was it not so with the Son of God himself? Does any child of man endure the distrefs, the anguish, the agony, which he sustained? And yet he knew no sin.

Q. 22. But can any one, that has a pure heart, prefer pleasing to unpleasing food? Or use any pleasure of sense, which is not strictly necessary? If so, how do they differ from others?

A. The difference between these and others, in taking pleasant food, is, 1. They need none of those things to make them happy. For they have a spring of happiness within. They see and love God: hence they rejoice evermore, and in every thing give thanks. 2. They may use them, but they do not seek them. 3. They use them sparingly, and not for the sake of the thing itself. This being premised, we answer directly, Such an one may use pleasing food, without the danger which attends those, who are not saved from sin. He may prefer it to unpleasing, though equally wholesome, as a means of
of increasing thankfulness, with a single eye to
God, "who giveth us all things richly to enjoy." On
the same principle, he may smell to a flower,
or eat a bunch of grapes, or take any other plea-
sure, which does not lessen, but increase his de-
light in God. Therefore neither can we say, that
one perfected in love would be incapable of
marriage: and of worldly business, if he were
called thereto, he would be more capable than
ever: as being able to do all things without
hurry, or carefulness, without any distraction
of spirit.

Q. 23. But if two perfect Christians had
children, how could they be born in sin, since
there was none in the parents?
A. It is a possible, but not a probable case: I
doubt whether it ever was, or ever will be. But
waving this, I answer, Sin is entailed upon
me, not by my immediate, but by my first parent.
"In Adam all died: by the disobedience of one,
all men were constituted sinners." And this
constitution involves all without exception, who
were in his loins when he ate the forbidden
fruit.

We have a remarkable illustration of this in
gardening. Grafts on a crab-stock bear excellent
fruit. But sow the kernels of this fruit, and
what will be the event? They produce as mere
crabs, as ever were eaten.

Q. 24. But what does this perfect one more
than others? more than common believers?
A. Perhaps nothing; so may the providence
of God have hedged him in, by outward
circumstances. Perhaps not so much: (though
he desires and longs to spend and be spent for God)
at least not externally: he neither speaks so
many.
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION. 237

many words, nor does so many works. (As neither did our Lord himself speak so many words, or do so many, no, nor so great works, as some of his Apostles, John xiv. 12.) But what then? This is no proof, that he has not more grace: and by this God measures the outward work. Hear ye him. “Verily I say unto you, this poor widow hath cast in more than them all.” Verily this poor man, with his few, broken words, hath spoke more than them all. O cease to judge according to appearance, and learn to judge righteous judgment!

Q. 25. But is not this a proof against him, I feel no power, either in his words or prayer?

A. It is not: for perhaps that is your own fault. You are not likely to feel any power therein, if any of these hinderances lie in your way. 1. Your own deadness of soul. The dead Pharisees felt no power even in his words, who “spake as never man spake.” 2. The guilt of some unrepented sin, lying upon your conscience. 3. Your not believing that state to be attainable, wherein he professes to be. 4. Prejudice toward him of any kind. 5. Unwillingness to think or own what he has attained. 6. Over-valuing or idolising him. 7. Over-valuing yourself, and your own judgment. If any of these is the case, what wonder is it, that you feel no power in any thing he says? But do others feel it? If they do, your argument falls to the ground. And if they do not, do none of these hinderances lie in their way too? You must be certain of this, before you can build any argument thereon. And even then, your argument will prove no more than, that grace and gifts do not always go together.

“ But
"But he does not come up to my idea of a perfect Christian." And perhaps no one ever did, or ever will. For your idea may go beyond, or at least, beside the scriptural account. It may include more than the Bible includes therein, or however something which that does not include. Scriptural Perfection is, pure love filling the heart, and governing all the words and actions. If your idea includes anything more, or anything else, it is not scriptural; and then no wonder, that a scripturally perfect Christian does not come up to it.

I fear many stumble on this stumbling-block. They include as many ingredients as they please, not according to scripture, but their own imagination, in their idea of one that is perfect: and then readily deny any one to be such, who does not answer that imaginary idea.

The more care should we take, to keep the simple, scriptural account continually in our eye; pure love reigning alone in our heart and life, this is the whole of scriptural perfection.

Q. 26. When may a person judge himself to have attained this?

A. When, after having been fully convinced of inbred sin, by a far deeper and clearer conviction, than that he experienced before justification, and after having experienced a gradual mortification of it, he experiences a total death to sin, and an entire renewal in the love and image of God, so as to rejoice evermore, to pray without ceasing, and in every thing to give thanks. Not that the feeling all love, and no sin, is a sufficient proof. Several have experienced this for a considerable time, and yet were afterwards convinced, that their souls were not entirely
entirely renewed, and that sin was only laid asleep, not destroyed. None therefore ought to believe, that the work is done, till there is added the testimony of the Spirit, witnessing his entire sanctification, as clearly as his justification.

Q. 27. But whence is it, that some imagine they are thus sanctified, when in reality they are not?

A. It is hence: they do not judge by all the preceding marks, but either by part of them, or by others that are inconclusive. But I know no instance of any person duly attending to them all, and yet deceived in this matter. I believe there can be none in the world. If a man be deeply and fully convinced after justification of inbred sin; if he then experiences a gradual mortification of it, and afterward an entire renewal in the image of God: if to this change, immensely greater than that wrought when he was justified, there be added a clear, direct witness of that renewal: I judge it is impossible this man should be deceived herein, as that God should lie. And if one whom I know to be a man of veracity, testify these things to me, without some very sufficient reason, I ought not to reject his testimony.

Q. 28. Is this death to sin and renewal in love, gradual or instantaneous?

A. A man may be dying for some time; yet he does not, properly speaking, die, till the instant the soul is separated from the body: And in that instant he lives the life of eternity. In like manner, he may be dying to sin for some time; yet he is not dead to sin, till sin is separated from the soul. And in that instant, he lives the full life of love. And as the change undergone
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

undergone when the body dies, is of a different kind, and infinitely greater than any we had known before, yea, such as till then it is impossible to conceive: So the change wrought when the soul dies to sin, is of a different kind, and infinitely greater than any before, and than any one can conceive till he experience it. Yet he still "grows in grace, and in the knowledge of Christ," in the love and image of God: And will do so not only till death, but to all eternity.

Q. 29. How are we to wait for this change?
A. Not in careless indifference, or indolent inactivity, but in vigorous and universal obedience, in a zealous keeping of all the commandments; in watchfulness and painfulness; in denying ourselves and taking up our cross daily: As well as in earnest prayer and fasting, and a close attendance on all the ordinances of God. And if any man dream of attaining it any other way, he deceiveth his own soul. It is true, we receive it by simple faith: But God does not, will not give that faith, unless we seek it with all diligence, in the way which he hath ordained.

This consideration may satisfy those who enquire, Why so few have received the blessing? Enquire how many are seeking it this way? and you have a sufficient answer.

Prayer especially is wanting. Who continues instant therein? Who wrestles with God for this very thing? So "ye have not, because ye ask not;" or because ye ask amiss, namely, "That you may be renewed before you die." Before you die? Will that content you? Nay, but ask, that it may be done now, to-day, while it is called to-day: Do not call this, "Setting God
God a time." Certainly to-day is his time, as well as to-morrow. Make haste, man, make haste! Let

Thy soul break out in strong desire
The perfect be to prove!
Thy longing heart be all on fire,
To be dissolv'd in love!

Q. 30. But may we continue in peace and joy, till we are perfected in love?
A. Certainly we may; for the kingdom of God is not divided against itself. Therefore let not believers be discouraged from rejoicing in the Lord always. Let them all their life rejoice unto God, provided it be with reverence. Neither need we be anxiously careful about perfection, lest we should die before we have attained it. We ought to be "thus careful for nothing," but cheerfully to "make our request known to God." And yet we may be in a sense, pained at the sinful nature, which still remains in us. It is good for us to have a piercing sense of this, and a vehement desire to be delivered from it. But this should only incite us the more zealously to fly every moment to our strong helper, the more earnestly to "press forward to the prize of our high-calling in Christ Jesus." And when the sense of our sin most abounds, the sense of his love would much more abound.

Q. 31. How should we treat those who think they have attained?
A. Examine them as closely as possible, and exhort them to pray fervently, that God would shew them all that is in their heart. The most earnest exhortations to abound in every grace, and the strongest cautions to avoid all evil, are given
given throughout the New Testament to those, who are in the highest state of grace. But this should be done with the utmost tenderness; without any harshness, sternness, or sourness. We should carefully avoid the very appearance of anger, unkindness, or contempt. Leave it to Satan thus to tempt, and to his children to cry out, "Let us examine him with despightfulness and torture, that we may know his meekness, and prove his patience." If they are faithful to the grace given, even tho' they mistake, they are in no danger of perishing thereby. No, not if they remain in that mistake, till their spirit is returning to God.

Q. 32. But what hurt can it do, to deal harshly with them?

A. Either they are mistaken, or they are not. If they are, it may destroy their souls: This is nothing impossible, no, nor improbable. It may so enrage, or so discourage them, that they will sink, and rise no more. If they are not mistaken, it may grieve those whom God has not grieved, and do much hurt to our own souls. For undoubtedly he that touches them, touches, as it were, the apple of God's eye. If they are indeed full of his Spirit, his peculiar possession, the excellent ones of the earth, to behave unkindly, or contemptuously to them, is doing no little " despite to the Spirit of Grace." Hereby likewise we feed and increase in ourselves evil surmising, and many wrong tempers. To instance only in one: what self-sufficiency is this, to set ourselves up for inquisitors-general, for peremptory judges in these deep things of God? Are we really qualified for the office? Can we pronounce in all cases, how far infirmity reaches? What may, and what
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION. 243

what may not be resolved into it? What may in all circumstances, and what may not conflict with perfect love? Can we precisely determine, how it will influence the look, the gesture, the tone of voice? If we can, doubtless "we are the men, and wisdom shall die with us!"

Q. 33. Are we not apt to have a secret distaste to any who say they are saved from sin?

A. It is very possible we may, and that on several grounds: Partly from a concern for the honour of God, and a fear lest others should be hurt, if these deceive their own souls: Partly from a secret envy of those, who speak of higher attainments than our own: (Altho' they who act from this principle are very rarely conscious of it,) Partly, from our natural slowness and unreadiness to believe the work of God. Accordingly, they who are most unready to believe them that testify entire sanctification, are likewise remarkably unready to believe the witnesses of justification: And frequently use as harsh and unkind speeches, in the one case as in the other.

Q. 34. But if they are displeased at our not believing them, is not this a full proof against them?

A. According as that displeasure is. If they are angry, it is a proof against them; if they are grieved, it is not. They ought to be grieved, if we disbelieve a real work of God, and thereby deprive ourselves of the advantage we might have received from it. And we may easily mistake this grief for anger, as the outward expressions of both are much alike.

Q. 35. But is it not well, to find out those who fancy they have attained when they have not?
244  CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

A. It is well, to do it by mild, close, loving examination. But it is not well, to triumph even over these. It is extremely wrong, if we find such an instance, to rejoice, as if we had found great spoils. Ought we not rather to grieve, to be deeply concerned, to let our eyes run down with tears? Here is one who seemed to be a living proof of God's power to save to the uttermost. But alas, it is not as we hoped: he has been "weighed in the balance and found wanting." And is this matter of joy? Ought we not to rejoice a thousand times more, if we can find nothing but pure love?

"But he is deceived." What then? It is an harmless mistake, while he feels nothing but love in his heart. It is a mistake which generally argues great grace, an high degree both of holiness and happiness. This then should be matter of real joy, to all that are simple of heart: not the mistake itself, but that height of grace which for a time occasions it. I rejoice, that this soul is always happy, always full of prayer and thanksgiving. I rejoice that he feels no unholy temper, but the pure love of God continually. And I will rejoice, if sin is suspended till it is totally destroyed.

Q 36. Is there then no danger in a man's being thus deceived?

A. Not at the time that he feels no sin. There was danger before, and there will be again, when he comes into fresh trials. But so long as he feels nothing but love, animating all his thoughts, and words, and actions; he is in no danger: He is not only happy, but safe, under the shadow of the Almighty: and for God's sake, let him continue in that love as long as he can.
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION. 245

can. Meantime you may do well, to warn him of the danger that will be, if his love grow cold, and sin revive, even the danger of casting away hope, of being sorrowful above measure, and supposing that, because he has not attained yet, therefore he never shall.

Q. 37. But what if none have attained it yet? What if all, who think so, are deceived?

A. Convince me of this, and I will preach it no more. But understand me right. I do not build any doctrine on this or that person. This or any other man may be deceived, and I am not moved. But if there are none made perfect yet, God has not sent me to preach perfection.

Put a parallel case. For many years I have preached, "There is a peace of God, which passeth all understanding." Convince me, that this word has fallen to the ground, that in all these years none have attained this peace; that there is no living witness of it at this day, and I will preach it no more.

"O, but several persons have died in that peace." Perhaps so; but I want living witnesses. I cannot indeed, without the discernment of spirits, be infallibly certain, that any are such. But if I am certain that none are such, I have done with this doctrine.

So, in the present case. For many years I have preached; "There is a love of God, which casts out all sin." Convince me, that this word has fallen to the ground; that in twenty years none has attained this love; that there is no living witness of it at this day, and I will preach it no more.

"Nay, several persons have died in this love." But these are not living witnesses. I cannot indeed.
CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

deed be infallibly certain, that this or that person is a witness. But if I were certain, there were none such, I must have done with this doctrine.

"You misunderstand me. I believe, some who died in this love, enjoyed it long before their death. But I was not certain of this; that their former testimony was true, till some hours before they died."

You had not an infallible certainty then; and a reasonable certainty you might have had before: such a certainty, as might have quickened and comforted your own soul, and answered all other christian purposes. Such a certainty as this any candid person may have, suppose there be any living witness, by talking one hour with that person, in the love and fear of God.

Q. 38. But what does it signify, whether any have attained it or no, seeing so many scriptures witness for it?

A. If I were convinced, that none in England had attained, what has been so clearly and strongly preached by such a number of preachers, in so many places, and for so long a time; I should be hereby convinced, that we had all mistaken the meaning of those scriptures; and therefore for the time to come, I too must teach, that sin will remain till death.
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

1. The first motions of turning to God are usually like a spark of fire, dropped on ice, with the winds blowing on all sides; which must therefore be quickly extinguished, unless God is pleased to keep it alive.

2. If you desire to give yourself up to God, be not discouraged at hindrances, temptations, oppositions: But consider, the grace of God in the soul, grows by degrees, like a grain of mustard-seed in the earth.

3. It is not said, "Blessed is the man that hath not sinned"; but he "to whom the Lord imputeth it not."

4. Read a little at a time, and offer it to God on your knees. Thus David prayed seven times a day.

5. The grace we receive soon vanishes away, if it be not nourished and increased by holy exercises, which are the very first fruits, or rather the first blossoms of conversion.

6. Retirement from the world, joined with prayer and proper employ, are means of mortifying our senses, without which, prayer profits little.

7. The best helps to mortification are, the ill usage, the affronts, and the losses which befal us. We should receive them with all humility, as preferable to all others, were it only on this account,
account, That our will has no part therein, as it has in those which we choose for ourselves.

8. Wo to them who seek comments to obscure the Bible, and to widen the narrow way of salvation! For none can change the word of our Lord, "I have given you an example, that ye may do as I have done:" Neither that word, "What I say unto you, I say unto all."

9. When we would give ourselves to God, we should not be eager at the beginning, to hear long discourses, on the sublime truths of christianity; since it is not then the time for deep knowledge, but for good works and sufferings. Those who are just turning to God, may even receive prejudice from such an employment of their yet feeble minds. It suffices for them now, to know what they ought to do, and instead of multiplying knowledge, to multiply good works.

10. We should bear not only with patience but with joy, loss of goods, pleasures, and the evils of earth; seeing Christ has taught us by his example, that there is no other way of attaining the glory of heaven.

11. The souls of men are things so great and precious, that having need, according to the divine wisdom, of an invisible guardian, and a visible guide, they can neither have an angel to guard, nor a man to guide them, but those whom God himself gives, by a peculiar appointment.

12. The language of love and grace is upon earth, the beginning of the language of heaven.

13. Those, who feel that they are always on the verge of death, and who have eternity in their heart, will not find any thing very alluring
luring or agreeable in the world. And he, to whom God is all, looks on every thing upon earth as nothing.

14. True virtue consists in a thorough conformity to the whole will of God, who wills and does all, (excepting sin) which comes to pass in the world. And in order to be truly holy, we have only to embrace all events, good and bad; as his will.

15. Except the fight of glory, and the participation of grace, (the light of God,) all is darkness in this world, and in the other. We need not therefore so much lament over those who want their bodily fight, as over them, who, being quick-fought in this life, will in the other be blind for ever.

16. God is not honoured as God, in a manner worthy of him, but by the voluntary oblation, which we make of our life. His Son made an oblation of his own to God; which obliges us, if we are real Christians, to give him our life, and that of those, who are so dear to us, that they are as our second soul.

17. In the greatest afflictions, which can befall the just, either from heaven or earth, they remain immoveable in virtue, and perfectly submissive to God, by an inward, loving regard to him, uniting all the powers of the soul.

18. Such is the condescension of God, that he requires us to love him even more than we fear him. Many fear, without loving him; but no one loves, without fearing him, and being ready to die, rather than offend him. Among persons of every age, and every profession, there are but few of this disposition: But what of piety appears in them, resembles the blossoms which we see in spring, that adorn the trees for awhile,
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

250

awhile, but soon disappear, and leave no fruit behind them.

19. Whether we think, or speak to God, whether we act or suffer for him, all is prayer, when we have no other object than his love, and the desire of pleasing him.

20. That silence of spirit, which cuts off all those thoughts and words, that might spring from the affliction we feel, on the loss of them who are most near and dear to us, is the best submission we can pay, to that empire over the living and the dead, which God has reserved to himself. And the best devotion we can practise on these occasions is, as far as possible, to efface from our minds those images, which disquiet and afflict us, that God alone may fill our hearts, and remain for ever the object and the master of our passions, and of our thoughts.

21. We ought to consider, at the death of those whom we love the most, and even of them from whom we received life, that all the names of tenderness and respect, which proceed from flesh and blood, are lost at the moment of their separation from us, to return to God as their principle: To the end that, the stream running no more, we may have recourse to the fountain: that, ceasing to see them, we may seek to him, of whom they were only the image; and that so we may now have no other Father than him which is in heaven, of whom we are incessantly to ask the bread of life, and the eternal inheritance.

22. The most magnificent houses and palaces are only trophies of human vanity, which in a little time will perish in flames with the world. Let us provide an habitation, in the eternal palace of
CHRI\NIAN INSTRUCTIONS. 251

of paradise, by now purifying ourselves in the flames of divine love.

23. In the world, the fathers must die, before their children can enter upon their inheritance. But in the church, the children must die, to enter into the inheritance of their heavenly Father.

24. If the death of them we love, does not make us enter into ourselves, correct that which displeases God, and ask of him light to discover the illusions of the world and the devil; we have reason to fear that nothing will, but that we shall live and die without wisdom.

25. Grace from within, and affliction from without, destroy the sins of those souls, who cast themselves into the arms of God, and sincerely desire to be given up to him.

26. The language of love, even when it speaks the most strongly, ought to be decent and courteous, there being no courtesy like that which we learn from the holy Scripture.

27. We need not affect elaborate reasonings in matters of grace, because the principle of this is faith, which does not reason at all, which goes simply where God points out the way.

28. The way to find nothing grievous in this world, is to have eternity always in our thoughts, for then all of grand and magnificent which we see here, appears a mere shadow, a nothing. How natural a reflection is this, when great men die in the prime of life! What can shew in a stronger light, the vanity of all which men admire so much and leave so soon!

29. We ought to honour those holy ones whom God honours, and to expect more assistance from them than from others, at the time when
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

when he manifests their holiness; because they are then, as it were, new fountains which God causes to appear in his church, and who will soon (as other saints have done) retire into God their source, after they shall have watered a few more of his children.

30. God hates nothing so much as the forgetting the favours which he does to them whom he deigns to name his friends.

31. The whole life of a Christian consists in following God; who manifests his will more and more, according to our faithfulness to him.

32. When one is willing simply to follow the truth, there is no trouble in deciding the greatest difficulties.

33. God himself instructs those who follow him with simplicity, and shines in their hearts, when they regard none but him. To arrive at this happy state, we must desire only that which God gives us from his own hand, and beg him with fervent prayer, to keep us always in the desire of him alone, and of his grace.

34. It is scarce conceivable, how strait the way is, wherein God leads them that serve him, and how dependant upon him we must be, unless we will be wanting in our faithfulness to him.

35. It is God's part to prevent us, and ours to adore and serve him in perfect subjection to his will.

36. Few persons go to God with that fulness of heart, which makes them walk with vigour in the narrow way to heaven.

37. As a single soul surpasses in excellence all bodies, how beautiful soever they are; so a single
fingle spiritual sin often surpasses in guilt a multitude of bodily sins. And spiritual sins are the more dangerous, in that bodily sins usually come to a period, by age, by change of fortune, by removal of the occasions, by the disgusts that accompany, or the evils that follow them; but it is quite otherwise with spiritual; nothing being so fruitful as the sins of the spirit.

38. There is nothing so bitter, that love does not sweeten. And if one sees that the covetous, the ambitious, the voluptuous, turn their greatest labours into their greatest pleasures, is it strange that the love of God, and the sorrow for having offended him, are capable of sweetening whatever he has ordained for the healing of our souls?

39. God gives his children a kind of spiritual air to breathe, namely, the influence of his Spirit. And this never fails them that love him, how weak forever they are.

40. The grand truths of repentance and the present kingdom of heaven, are unveiled under the new law. The gospel always joins them together; and it is impossible to put them afunder.

41. As a very little dust will disorder a clock, and the least sand will obscure our sight, so the least grain of sin, which is upon the heart, will hinder its right motion toward God.

42. It is scarce credible, of how great consequence before God the smallest things are, and what great inconveniences sometimes follow those which appear to be light faults.

4. We ought to be in Church, as the saints are in heaven; and in the house, as the holiest men are in the Church; doing our work in the

Vol. IV. Y house,
house, as they pray in the Church, worshipping God from the ground of the heart.

44. There is no love of God without patience, and no patience without lowliness and sweetness of spirit. It is by this alone, that we are able to pass the days of winter, as those of summer; that is, the afflictions we meet with from time to time, as well as the joys and consolations.

45. God loves nothing so much as gratitude and thanksgiving. And as this is the first act of our piety, it ought to be the most constant, and to begin and conclude all our prayers.

46. To continue in grace, we must pray without ceasing, since we cannot continue, unless we grow therein. Hence it is, that many of those who receive it, lose it immediately: because their commerce with the world does not permit them to pray often; or if they do, it is with a thousand distractions, which dishonour the majesty of God, whom we should hardly approach, but with the lowest prostration both of body and soul. He dispenses indeed with that of the body, because our weakness does not permit us to be always in that posture: but our inmost soul should be always bowed down before him in the lowest humiliation.

47. The evils of the body cure themselves in time, but not those of the spirit; because they partake of its nature, which is immortal. And for this cure, we can rely on none but God; who is the only physician of souls, as it is he alone who created them.

48. The bearing with men, and suffering evils in peace and silence, is the sum of the whole Christian life. Without this, a man is a captive, though
though at liberty; and with this, he is free, though a captive.

49. A true christian is not a common thing. And he who is such, is unspeakably happy.

50. To be habitually prepared for the Lord's table, we must walk in the narrow way, at a distance from the world, nourish our souls with the truths of God laid down in the gospels, and in the epistles, which are a kind of commentaries upon them: meditate on them in the secret of our heart, and grow in love as well as in knowledge.

51. Truths resemble money, all the value whereof depends on the proper use of it.

52. Humility and patience are the surest proofs of the increase of love.

53. Instead of reading much, to satisfy our curiosity, we ought to content ourselves with reading a little, in order to make a full use thereof, and turn it, as it were, into our substance. Otherwise, by filling our heads with knowledge, we drive the grace of God from our hearts.

54. Both at the beginning and end, and even in the midst of our reading, we should lift up our hearts to God, whether with words or without, that he would please to convert what we read into spiritual food, such as by means of his truth may nourish and strengthen us more and more in his love.

55. The truths of religion are like essences, of which we give the sick a little at a time; being full of spirits, all parts of the body are affected by the little that is taken. This occasioned our blessed Lord to say, "My words are spirit and life." And accordingly, one of his
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

divine truths suffice a man to nourish his soul for a whole day.

56. One may say of the knowledge of sublime truths, what the Apostle says of the goods of this world; that they may not hurt a Christian, he ought to possess them, as if he possessed them not: that is, without any attachment to them, without any reliance upon them.

57. Nothing is so capable of destroying the grace of God, even in retirement, as idleness.

58. Agree with the poor quickly while thou art in the way with them. Make them friends by the mammon of unrighteousness. For they will be as princes in paradise, where they will receive the rich into the everlasting habitation.

59. The whole Christian religion is only love, pure and fervent as the fire at Pentecost.

60. Instead of busying our mind with dwelling on the grievous part of what is past and to come, we should remember, that the gospel does not permit us to dwell on any thing, but the presence and love of God, who fills our souls, provided we do not disquiet ourselves with vain thoughts. But he cannot, either in earth or heaven, inhabit any other than a peaceful heart.

61. Sweetness, joined with strength, are the two marks of the Spirit of God.

62. As God is well pleased that they who love him should form designs for his glory, we ought to labour therein with all our power; and yet not to be any way discomposed, when he breaks in pieces our best designs, so our heart is still fixed to be his entirely, and to live to his glory.

63. The
63. The whole of the christian religion is love. This alone destroys the desire of the goods, and the fear of the evils of this world. We should labour to increase it, without desiring and without fearing any thing.

64. The love of God has its sorrows and tears, as well as its joys and consolations.

65. As love, which is the soul of our soul, and the life of our life, is at first only a single spark, we should take care, that nothing remain in our soul, that hinders its growth and enlargement.

66. God is the first object of our love: Its next office is, to bear the defects of others. For as he is invisible to us, it is his will, that we see and love him in our neighbour. And we should begin the practice of this love, amidst our own household.

67. The littleness of things does not hinder their being greatly pleasing to God, when we do them with all our heart. As on the contrary, great things done lazily are little in his sight; because, in all our works, he regards the spirit, abundantly more than the matter.

68. Let none imagine he is virtuous, because he talks of virtue with pleasure. Virtue without practice is a mere illusion.

69. Those who seek God, find him in practising the exercises which he has prescribed in the gospel. The sum of them is, Love, obey, be humble, suffer his will.

70. God is so great, that we know not how to pray to him, but by his own Spirit, and the movement which he gives us.

71. Great virtue consists in trying to vary,
and multiply the marks of our gratitude, for all
the mercies of God.

72. One observes, That whereas there is but
one devil, who persecutes the innocent, there are
seven, who persecute the penitent.

73. Christ charges himself with our temporal
affairs, provided we charge ourselves with those
that regard his glory.

74. The smallest things of religion are great,
because the Spirit of God is in them.

75. The main of christianity consists in not
following our own spirit, and being given up to
God by renouncing ourselves. Accordingly,
there is nothing more profitable for a christian
than sickness, which joins obedience with faith.

76. Our own desire should be, to have no
other desire in this world, but to be faithful to
God.

77. Humility alone unites patience with love,
without which it is impossible to draw profit
from suffering, or indeed to avoid being dis-
contented at being afflicted: especially when we
think, that we have given no occasion for the
evil, which men make us suffer. If we then
fall into impatience, it is for want of humility,
whatever love we may appear to have.

78. Perfect humility is a kind of self-annihi-
lation, and this is the center of all virtues.

79. When we let the time of affliction pass,
without profiting by it, we commit three faults:
This is, to despise God; to forget ourselves; and
to overlook the great lesson, which religion
teaches, viz. What we are in this world, and
what we shall be in the other.

80. The first thing we ought to do, when a
great affliction befalls us, is, to examine the state
of
of our souls: and if we find ourselves culpable in any thing, whatever it costs, to make our peace with God.

81. There is none who comforts Christians, but the Spirit of God: The word itself, separate from him, is useless. He is therefore peculiarly filed the Comforter; because he is come down on the earth, on purpose to heal our sorrows and cares, by shedding his love abroad in our hearts.

82. The readiest way to escape from our sufferings is, to be willing they should endure as long as God pleases.

83. They, who have known most of the ineffable greatness of God, have had the deepest reverence for it. The sense of this ought to make us work out our salvation with fear and trembling, and distrust ourselves in our best undertakings, particularly in those which regard the service of the church; because they require the highest purity of heart in all that are employed therein.

84. As painters choose and prepare the ground which they design for their choicest works, so God prepares the ground of those souls, by whom he intends to do great things: thus he prepared St. Paul, even from his mother's womb.

85. We ought earnestly to pray to God before we undertake any thing, tho' we feel such love in our heart, that there are no poor whom we would not relieve, no sick whom we would not heal, and none afflicted whom we would not succour, even at the expense of our life. For experience shews, that in order to do good, it is not enough to have a loving heart; and that God sometimes
sometimes gives these desires, and yet does not bring them to effect.

86. Our own household gives us too great occasion to know the greatness and depth of our inward wounds, by the falls into which we are so often betrayed by their, perhaps, involuntary defects. How ought we to watch over ourselves, in order to resist these temptations, which (how littlesoever the occasions be) are great, because they are continual?

87. The bare sight of men in the world impresses I know not what of evil on the hearts of good men. There is a kind of contagious air hid in the spirit of the ungodly, which communicates itself to the soul more insensibly than the infection of the plague communicates itself to the body. In order, therefore, to solid, christian holiness, we must keep at a distance from these men.

88. The world is an enemy to truly good works, particularly the great change which God works in the soul.

89. Flattery is a poison, which is the more dangerous, the more sweet and insensible it is. Those, therefore, who are just setting out in religion, should carefully shut their ears to praise, even to that which the best of men sometimes give, without thinking of the mischief it may do.

90. Virtue is like a crystal, on which the least word of praise imprints a blot, which must be effaced.

91. We should be continually labouring to cut off all the useless things that surround us. And God usually retrenches the superfluities of our
our fouls, in the same proportion, as we do those of our bodies.

92. As the devil will not be shut up in the abyfs till the judgment of the great day, he makes, mean time, an abyfs of the souls of wicked men, into which he plunges himself with whole legions.

93. As man has nothing excellent but his love, he gives God nothing, unless he gives him this. Even as all the rest of God's gifts would be useless to man, did he not give him his love also.

94. The devil is so hideous, that he could not deceive us, nor make himself beloved by us, did he not cover himself with the beauty, and the sweet and agreeable appearance of the creatures.

95. The best means of resisting the devil is, to destroy whatever of the world remains in us, in order to raise for God upon its ruins, a building all of love. Then shall we begin in this fleeting life to love God as we shall love him in eternity.

96. The love of God and the love of the world cannot subsist together in one heart. It must needs be, that one of them will conquer and destroy the other.

97. St. Augustine says, There is danger, left after sin is killed, it comes to life again, if it be not buried.

98. If we would be superior to the goods and evils of this world, the things that are seen, ought to be to us as if they were not seen; and, on the other hand, the things that are not seen, as if they were always before our eyes.

99. Nothing
99. Nothing shews the real state of our soul like persecution and affliction. And if we suffer them with that humility and firmness, which only the grace of God can work in us, we attain a larger measure of conformity to Christ, by a due improvement of one of these occasions, than we could have done by imitating his mercy, in abundance of good works.

100. The Scripture speaks of the earth as a wilderness, an hospital, a prison, an image of hell. Therefore, Woe unto them who are attached to it; who do not labour to die to all below, and to aspire after nothing but heaven, where alone is true life, and all that deserves the name of good or pleasure.

101. How real sooner the things of earth appear, they are no other than veils that deceive us. The ills thereof hide eternal goods from us, and the goods hide from us eternal evils.

102. The true marks of love are, an hunger and thirst after the word and the life of Christ.

103. God often deals more rigorously with those whom he loves, than with others. And his will is, that the afflictions which he sends them, should serve to disengage them from whatever attached them to the world, that they may be more free to cleave to him.

104. We scarce conceive how easy it is to rob God of his due, in our friendship with the most virtuous persons, until they are torn from us by death. But if this loss produce lasting sorrow, it is a clear proof, that we had two treasures, between which we had divided our heart.

105. The devil is enraged only at those who fight against him; and his rage increases, when
CHRI\n
he sees the increase of grace in them. But he cannot conquer us, if we continue to fight, and to have a steady dependance upon God, who fights for and in his children, and can never be conquered.

106. We are to labour, as if we had no dependence on the grace of God; and to trust entirely in his grace, as if we did not labour at all. The one preserves us from negligence, the other from presumption.

107. There are some peculiar occasions that rarely occur, which we ought to manage with the utmost care; because one of these is of far more value before God, than many ordinary ones.

108. Even the weakness which remains in us, is by the testimony of God, one of the most powerful means of making us more strong than ever, more immovable in his service.

109. If we were not weak and impotent, our good works would be to us as our own property; just as the corn he produces out of the earth belongs to the husbandman. Whereas now they belong wholly to God, because they proceed from him and his grace, which triumphs over our weakness, when raising our works and making them all divine, he honours himself in us through them.

110. When men have sown the seed in the ground, they cease a while from their labour. But when Jesus Christ has sown his grace in our hearts, we should beseech him to labour with us still, and to perfect that which he has begun; otherwise there will be no fruit. For the devil omits nothing which may hinder the good seed from growing up, and bringing forth fruit unto perfection.

111. If
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

111. If we do not testify to God, by a continual care for our salvation, that we esteem his grace above all things, the least consent to an evil thing, makes it retire by little and little into the bosom of Christ, from whence it came. Yet as he is so gracious, that, as often we are truly humbled, he gives us new grace.

112. God, in order to cure some souls of those sins which are the greatest of all in his sight, suffers them to fall into others, which are greater in the sight of men.

113. Christian friendship is the refinement of that love which we bear to a fellow-christian, to whom God unites us by an affection which cannot be well known but by those who truly love God.

114. The Holy Spirit having made of all christians one soul, they ought to have the same joys and sorrows. But if it pleases him, (of which also we have examples in scripture,) to make of two or more christians one heart and one soul, there ought to be an increase of joy in their holy affections, as much greater as their friendship is more perfect than that of other christians.

115. One of the principal rules of religion is, To lose no occasion of serving God. And since he is invisible to our eyes, we ought to serve him in our neighbour: which he receives as if done to himself in person, standing before us.

116. While a man is alienated from God, he makes little account of that natural inclination which such an one has to some good works, or his aversion to some sins. But from the moment that he is converted to God, he sanctifies this inclination.
inclination and this aversion, and serves himself of it in order to increase it: And nevertheless the case with which we do those good works, and avoid those evil ones, does not at all diminish the reward or value of them. Thus what was only virtuous heathenism before, becomes true christian virtue, by the infusion of love, which is in us as it were a second soul, all divine, and which transforms into itself that which before animated the body.

117. How clear-sighted ever a man is in other respects, he hardly sees all that love requires to be done, whether in respect of God or his neighbour, but while he feels that love in his heart.

118. The way to advance more and more in love, is to practise it to the uttermost.

119. The chief worship we owe to God, is to love him with all our heart, without sharing it between him and the creatures. They ought to serve us only for steps, to lift us up toward him.

120. Love has this in common with sacrifice, that it ought to be offered to God alone.

121. To preserve the life of the soul, prayer ought to be joined with the other ordinances, as it is the channel which reaches to heaven, and brings down into the soul that breath of God without which it cannot live.

122. Charity cannot be practised right, unless first, We exercise it from the moment God gives the occasion; and, secondly, retire the instant after, and offer it to God by humble thanksgiving. And this for three reasons; the first, to render to him what we have received from him; the second, to avoid the dangerous temptation which springs from the very goodness
of these works; and the third, to unite ourselves to God, in whom the soul expands itself in prayer, with all the graces we have received, and the good works which we have done, to draw from him new strength against the bad effects which these very works may produce in us, if we do not make use of the antidotes which God has ordained against these poisons. The true means, to be filled anew with the riches of grace, is thus to strip ourselves of it: and without this, it is extremely difficult not to grow faint in the practice of good works.

123 We ought to know that we have no part in the good which we do: and that accordingly, as God hides himself in doing it by us, we ought also, as far as is possible, to hide it from ourselves, and in a manner to annihilate ourselves before him, saying, "Lord, we are nothing before thee; but thou art all to us. We continue to be as nothing, after thou hast by thy double mercy, drawn us out of nothing, and out of sin; the proof whereof we incessantly bear in ourselves, in our continual weakness and helplessness. We see ourselves in the midst of an ocean: for thou art the true and boundless ocean of nature and of grace, which neither ebbs nor flows, but is permanent and immovable. Thou spreadest abroad, as it pleaseth thee, the celestial waters, in all ages, and drawest them back, and sendest them again into the souls thou lovest, by fluxes and refluxes inexpressible and divine. Thy Spirit is the only wind that blows and that reigns over this infinite ocean. And as we see the waters on the earth, which cease to run, though for a little time, are immediately corrupted, we have reason to fear, lest the same thing
thing befal our souls, if instead of causing these heavenly waters to return to thee their source, we retain and stop them in their motion, thò, it were but for a moment. For whereas the rivers of earth corrupt themselves, when they stop, but without corrupting the channel, th'o' which they flow, the rivers of thy grace, th'o' stop, are never themselves corrupted, but the souls, the channels; th'o' which they pass. We find, therefore, O God, it is more difficult to restore to thee, by an humble thankfulness, the graces we have received from thee, than to attract them into our souls by prayer; and that accordingly these refluxes towards the fountain are greater favours, than even the effluxes therefrom. Wherefore the only grace, which we implore from thee, and which comprehends all others, is, that thy grace may never descend to us, but to re-ascend toward thee; and that it may never re-ascend, but to descend into us again: So that we may be eternally watered by thee, and thou be eternally glorified."

124. Good works do not receive their last perfection, till they, as it were, lose themselves in God. This is a kind of death to them, resembling that of our bodies, which will not attain their highest life, their immortality, till they lose themselves in the glory of our souls, or rather of God, wherewith they will be filled. And it is only what they had of earthly and mortal, which good works lose by this spiritual death.

125. Fire is the symbol of love; and the love of God is the principle and end of all our good works. But as truth surpasse figure, the fire of divine love has this advantage over material fire,
fire, that it can re-ascend to its source, and raise thither with it all the works which it produces. And by this means it prevents their being corrupted by pride, vanity, or any evil mixture. But this cannot be done, otherwise than by making these good works in a spiritual manner, die in God, by deep gratitude which plunges the soul in him as an abyss, with all that it is, and all the grace and works for which it is indebted to him: a gratitude, whereby the soul seems to empty itself of them, that they may return to their source, as rivers seem willing to empty themselves, when they pour themselves with all their waters into the sea.

126. The admiration of a natural man flows from ignorance; but that of a christian from knowledge.

127. When we have received any favour from God, we ought to retire, (if not into our closet, into our heart) and say, "I come, Lord, to restore to thee what thou hast given, and I freely relinquish it, to enter again into my own nothingness. For what is the most perfect creature in heaven or earth, in thy presence, but a void capable of being filled with thee and by thee, as the air which is void and dark is capable of being filled with the light of the sun? Grant, therefore, O God, that I may never appropriate thy grace to myself, any more than the air appropriates to itself the light of the sun; who withdraws it every day, to restore it the next, there being nothing in the air that either appropriates his light, or resists it. O give me the same facility of receiving and restoring thy grace and good works: I say thine; for I acknowledge
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS. 269

Knowledge the root from which they spring is in thee and not in me.

128. As all that we can call properly our own; is the evil, which is natural to us, they who are truly touched by the Spirit of God, have no right to complain of any reproach; whether they are guilty of the thing or not. It suffices, that they have in them the principle of all the faults, which are, or can be laid to their charge.

129. There is no true charity, which is not accompanied with humility, courage, and patience.

130. We should chiefly exercise our love toward those, who most shock either our way of thinking, or our temper, or our knowledge, or the desire we have, that others should be as virtuous, as we wish to be ourselves.

131. As God once subsisted, without any creature, in his own infinite fulness, so love will one day subsist in itself, without any outward works, which are now only the streams; whereof love is the source; the shoots, of which this is the root; the rays, whereof love is the sun; the sparks, of which this is the fire, always acting, always consuming, and yet preserving the soul wherein it dwells.

132. The desire of exercising charity obliges us to purify ourselves, by all sorts of holy exercises, that we may be filled with the gifts of God, and capable of imparting them to others, without losing any thing of our own fulness. By thus exerting our charity, we increase it. This alone, when it fills the heart, has the advantage of giving always, and by giving enriching itself.

133. One
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

133. One of the greatest evidences of the love of God, to the souls he has touched with his love, is to send them afflictions, with grace to bear them.

134. There is no affliction, which befalls the righteous, of which God is not the author. And whereas the ills of other men have no mixture of good, God mingles with the sufferings of the righteous those seeds, which altho' bitter at first, yet afterward bring forth peaceable fruit.

135. Even in great sicknesses or afflictions, we ought to testify to God, that in receiving them as from his hand, we feel pleasure in the midst of the pain, from being afflicted by him who loves us, and whom we love.

136. If we were persuaded, that God does not afflict us, but only to make us still more capable of loving him, by purifying our hearts thro' that fire, which he came to bring into the world, we should take pleasure in suffering our afflictions, and consuming, by that divine fire, this fire of the earth, which makes us love too well our bodies, our health, our own will, and the things of the world.

137. There would be danger in even mentioning to any person any good work, which he had done, if he was not humble, and his heart abased before God, by a deep sense of his favours.

138. God usually mingles pains with the signal graces which he gives, or will give to them he loves. And his thus casting them down is the ordinary token, that he is about to raise them up.

139. Happy
139. Happy are they, who are sick, or lose their life, for having done a good work.

140. The souls of the just re-enter into God by death, as the venal blood re-enters the heart.

141. Most of those, who die well in the judgment of men, die ill in the judgment of God.

142. The weightiness of our words and actions, is an effect of simplicity, joined with prudence.

143. Nothing gives us so great confidence in speaking, as speaking from the fulness of our heart. And when it is filled with love, this confidence is so great, that we can hardly refrain from speaking.

144. He, who loves none but God, thinks of him always; and that, which is not God, cannot please him.

145. "If I grieve, O Lord, it is because, loving thee as I do, I do not see thee."

146. God is so great, that he communicates his greatness to the least things, which are done for his service.

147. To live as a christian, one must act only by the Spirit of God: Otherwise we live as heathens.

148. God hardly gives his Spirit even to those, whom he has already established in grace, if they do not ask it of him on all occasions, not only once, but many times.

149. The first fruit of faith is prayer, the lifting up the soul to God, to implore his assistance even in the smallest things, which it would undertake for his service.

150. Faith
272. CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

150. Faith teaches us two things at the same time: One, that we ought to do nothing but for God; the other, that he must engage us in those good works, which we would carry on and finish well.

151. As far as we advance in obedience, so far we advance in faith. And so far as we advance in faith, we advance in love, which is the heart, the life, the soul of faith.

152. We should do nothing without asking consent of God: And we should take care, not to prevent his answer, by those almost insensible desires, which lie hid in the foldings of our heart.

153. All is clear to us, in proportion as we walk in the bright path of faith, obedience, prayer, love, and christian fidelity.

154. God teaches the souls he loves, and that love him, in a far more excellent manner than men can do. For, whereas they speak only to the ear, he speaks to the heart. They can only propose what ought to be done; he gives power to execute, light and heat at once.

155. When a christian is sick, his bed is his church.

156. We should be prepared by purity of heart to speak of God, lest we should wound his truths. We are to give a strict account of our least idle words; and shall we not give a strict account of his truth?

157. Great men have herein more of the image of God than others, that they have more means of doing good. And one may say, that they are born for that end, to do good in the world.

158. God
158. God never hears our prayers, without increasing our love to him and our neighbour.

159. All that a Christian does, even his eating and sleeping, is prayer, when it is done in simplicity, according to the order of God, without either adding to, or diminishing from it, by his own choice.

160. Love is the only virtue, which has no bounds.

161. The three greatest punishments, which God can inflict on sinners in this world, are,
1. To let loose their own desires upon them;
2. To let them succeed in all they wish for; and,
3. To suffer them to continue many years, in the quiet enjoyment thereof.

162. The heathen philosophers well knew, that man is the world in miniature. But they did not know, that every single man is a world of corruption; and that all the impurity, which is in the creation, flows from the impurities contained in our souls.

163. If the greatest philosophers can hardly account for the conflicts that rise in the air, how can they account for those, that arise in our soul, the depth of which surpasses that of the sea? This ignorance is one of the greatest exercises of our patience; and the most useful, if we suffer, but not consent to it.

164. God considers our outward good works, only according to the good dispositions of our hearts. And as this is sometimes like the trees in winter, full of warmth within, tho' producing nothing without, he loves this barrenness caused only by outward hindrances, more than men do flowers and fruits.

165. True friendship obliges us to have no
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

Let's regard to the desires of our friends than to their needs.

166. Happy the soul in which love never sleeps, and to which it serves for a perpetual spur.

167. It is observed, That the actions which proceed from love, are done without difficulty. How much more, if they proceed from the love of God, since it is himself who does them in us?

168. God in creating visible things, only gave us a picture of things invisible.

169. There are three ways for edifying our neighbour; the first, To treat well, at least in words, all evil men, particularly those, who seek to do us evil: The second, To judge no man, tho' appearances are against him; and even when the fault is proved, as far as we can, either to excuse, or cover it by a modest silence: And the third, unless there be a plain necessity, not to speak of ourselves, good or bad.

170. Love shows courtesy to young and old, good and bad, wise and unwise; indeed to all the world. But it uses no flattery either to others or ourselves.

171. Love fails when it can, and as much as it can. It leads to all the ordinances of God, and employs itself in all the outward works whereof it is capable. It flies, as it were, like Elijah, over the plain, to find God upon his holy mountain.

172. We ought to suffer with patience whatever befalls us, to bear the defects of others, and our own, to own them to God in secret prayer, or with groans, which cannot be uttered: but never.
never to speak a sharp or peevish word, nor to murmur or repine.

173. If to avoid the occasions of sin, and to strengthen our weakness, we would now and then retire from the world, it is incredible, what help we should receive from God, and what increase in the fruits of his Spirit.

174. The sea is an excellent figure of the fulness of God, and that of the blessed spirits. For as the rivers all return into the sea, so the bodies, the souls, and the good works of the righteous, return into God, to live there in his eternal repose.

175. What the Scripture terms, the finger of God, is no other than the Holy Spirit, who engraves on our hearts what pleases him.

176. Nothing is more opposite to salvation than the love of riches; for in the same proportion as these increase, all experience shews, the love of pleasure and the desire of honour increases also.

177. One that is truly poor in spirit, loves poverty, as much as other men love riches.

178. At first the Christians were wholly distincl from the world. But as they are now mingled with it, and of the same spirit, those who seriously desire salvation, ought, so far as they can, to separate themselves from all that have the spirit of the world.

179. It is full as glorious, to die for charity as for truth; nor will it have a less recompense from God.

180. Death entered by the ear into the soul of our first mother: By the eye chiefly it enters the souls of her children. But whereas Eve, after having hearkened to the serpent, took the for-
bitten fruit, her children generally, after having seen it, hearken to the counsels of the devil. And indeed, if the few words of that unhappy spirit ruined Eve, even in a state of innocence, what can we expect, if in our state of sin and impotence, we pass our life in perpetual converse with the world, and in the continual fight of creatures, under which the devil conceals himself, far better than under the form of the serpent?

181. To conceive still better the danger we are in, while we remain in the corruption of the world, consider on the one hand, Eve, with her strength and innocence, in the paradise of God; on the other, men, weak and sinful; the creatures all infectious, all instruments of sin, and that are as a veil with which the devil covers himself, to tempt the more effectually; and lastly, the world, which is the place of banishment with regard to our bodies, a prison with regard to our souls, and an hell with regard to those evil spirits, who remain there, continually mingled with men, till the judgment of the great day.

182. The world which we are to hate, is not this heaven and this earth which we behold, but the infection which sin has spread thro' them and all the creatures which they contain. So that whereas at their creation they were the objects that excited man's praise, admiration and devotion toward God, they are now the deceitful objects of his concupiscence and irregular desires.

183. The great, will, after their death, look upon the pomp and pleasures wherein they had lived, just as those who awake from a deep sleep.
do on the riches, honours, and pleasures, which they saw in their dream.

184. There is no other way to find God, than to despise all things else, to love him alone, in the Unity of his Being, the Trinity of Persons, and the Incarnation of his Son.

185. Altho' all that is created lives in and by God, as the birds live in and by the air, nevertheless this universal system of beings, has not yet acquired its last perfection. It bears deeply engraven in all its parts, the marks of Adam's disobedience; which renders it altogether unworthy of our desires and affections.

186. God has not given man an heart so vast and so capable of loving, but in order to fill it with his love, and with himself alone. Accordingly we ought to use the creatures as so many steps to raise us up to the Author of our being, that we may render him not only for ourselves, but for them also, a perpetual homage, by acknowledging all the wonders and benefits for which they are indebted to him.

187. As on many occasions some of the senses correct the others, and reason corrects them all: So faith, which is in Christians a superior reason, ought to correct the judgment which purely human reason forms of the goods and evils of this world.

188. If the whole earth is no more than a point, compared by the heaven that surrounds it; what is it when compared to the superior sphere, which surrounds all the lower heavens? What is the littleness then of any or of all the things, which the earth contains?

189. All that is good here below, flows from above. And if but one drop could fall into our heart,
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

heart, of the happiness of heaven, pure as it is in its source, earth would become a paradise. Nor would there then be need to put off the body: Because the least part of those heavenly goods, received in its fulness, would render us blessed and immortal even in this world.

190. Altho' all the grace of God depends on his mere bounty, yet he is pleased generally to attach them to the prayers, and good instructions, the good examples, and the holiness of those among whom we are brought up. And if we knew the secret of the grace of Christ, and the strong tho' invisible attractions whereby he draws some souls thro' their intercourse with others, we should beware to whom we intrusted the education of our children.

191. When the world displays all its grandeur and goods before us, we should say to it, as our Lord said to Satan, when he shewed him all the kingdoms of the earth and the glory of them; "Get thee behind me," world, "for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve."

192. There is nothing in the world that is not in a continual flux, and with so rapid a motion, that one cannot possess it, but part by part, and from moment to moment.

193. To prepare the mind for prayer, it ought to be at liberty, in tranquility, in humility, in confidence, in simplicity, and in an entire dependence on God: Not troubled, not divided, not wavering, neither preventing the will of God by any secret passion.

194. Prayer continues in the desire of the heart, tho' the understanding be employed on outward things.

195. We
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

195. We should not be impatient to receive of God, but to give him our heart, the only thing he requires.

196. Those words of St. Paul, "No man can call Jesus Lord, but by the Holy Ghost," shew us the necessity of eyeing God in our good works, in our prayers, and even in our minutest thoughts, knowing that none are pleasing to him, but those which he forms in us and with us. From hence we learn, that we cannot speak to him or serve him, unless he uses our tongue, hands, heart, to do by himself, and by his Spirit, whatever he would have us do.

197. All devotion depends on that new heart, which God gives us when it pleases him. In order to receive it, the soul should be disengaged, from all that shuts up the door of our heart against his Spirit. We are continually as asleep, unless he wakens us.

198. By retirement and abstraction from the world, we should remove all hindrances to those secret conversations, those visits unknown to men of the world, and those divine impressions, which make us groan and sigh, love and desire, pray and importune God, to give us the continual influence of his Spirit, without which, the soul remains dry and barren, as trees are in winter, tho' there may be life in their roots.

199. Whenever God ceases to inspire us by his Holy Spirit, we lie open to the corruption of our own spirit, and the malice of the wicked one. And this he frequently does, if we discontinue our watching, or are not instant in prayer.

200. God's command, "To pray without ceasing," is founded on the necessity we have of his grace, to preserve the life of God in our soul, which
which can no more subsist one moment without it, than the body can subsist without continual supplies of air.

201. If even those who have known the grace of God, do not continually watch unto prayer, the evil root of sin will have more influence on them than the good seed of grace.

202. God, in his excellent wisdom, raises in us good thoughts, and then inspires us with prayer, to ask of him those graces, which he is resolved to give, when we ask with a full submission to his will. Therefore in order to know, if we shall obtain what we ask, we have only to consider, Do we seek our own pleasure, or merely the grace of God in our prayers? If this only, we shall have the petitions we ask of him.

203. As the most dangerous winds may enter at little openings, so the devil never enters more dangerously into the souls of good men than by little amusements, and little, unobserved incidents, which seeming to be nothing, yet insensibly open the heart to great temptations.

204. To make our reading useful, it should be inclosed between two prayers, at the beginning and the end of it.

205. The chief desire of christian parents should be, for the salvation of their children. Without this, all they do for them serves only to draw the curse of God upon themselves; since they are as guardian angels, that ought to conduct to heaven those, to whom they have given life. It is a great mistake to suppose; they can please God by any other good works, while they neglect this.

206. True
206. True piety consists in doing, not what we choose, but what God chooses for us.

207. The holiest men are troubled, when God ever so little turns away his face from them. And from hence arises the necessity of continual watching and prayer.

208. The perfection we are incessantly to press after, is no other than perfect love: And love cannot increase in the soul, but by a disengagement from sensible and pleasing objects. Otherwise our love is false, our courteys deceitful, our condescension to others only a snare to ourselves: Because instead of flowing from the love of God, they flow from self-love, and the love of the world.

209. The readiest way, which God takes to draw a man to himself, is, to afflict him in that which he loves the most, and with good reason; and to cause this affliction to arise from some good action, done with a single eye: Because nothing can more clearly shew him the emptiness of what is most lovely and desirable in the world.

210. Separation from the world is the first step towards heaven, and the beginning of our commerce with God, who advances towards us, when he sees we estrange ourselves from others to go to him.

211. God does nothing, but in answer to prayer: And even those, who have been converted to God, without praying for it themselves, (which is exceeding rare,) were not, without the prayers of others.

212. As our wants are continual, so should our prayers be, chiefly in the beginning of our good resolutions: As there is no time, wherein

A a 3  we
213. To prayer should be added continual employment; for grace flies a vacuum, as well as nature; and the devil fills whatever God does not fill.

214. One ought to read the holy scriptures with so deep a respect, and so absolute a submission, as shew that we are thoroughly persuaded it is the Holy Ghost that speaks. And we ought to receive with all humility, what he is pleased to discover to us, to profit thereby, leaving the rest in the treasures of his infinite knowledge. Such reading is no less useful than prayer, and brings a blessing with it, which is the principle of our good works, and of the conduct of our whole life.

215. One of the greatest faults, which parents can commit, and which is the source of numberless disorders, in families and in commonwealths, is, that instead of bringing up their children, as those that are now the children of God, by the second birth, they think only of giving them such an education, as is suitable to their first birth. They take great care of them, as they are children of Adam, but none at all, as they are children of God. Thus they are murderers of their own children, stifling the life of God, which was begun in their souls.

216. If we would be obeyed by our domestics, we must not only command, but endeavour to gain their heart. For God himself, to make himself obeyed, does not barely give commandments, but also inspires his love into the souls of those who are to fulfil them.

217. Uniformity
217. Uniformity of life, and symmetry of action, is essential to Christian holiness. It is like a circle, which is considered as the first of figures, because of the equality of all its parts.

218. It is highly dangerous to grow in knowledge of the things of God, and not in the love of God.

219. God does not love men that are inconstant, nor good work, that are intermitted. Nothing is pleasing to him, but what has a resemblance of his own immutability.

220. God, who is a Spirit, will dwell nowhere on earth, but in our spirits, which are his palaces. But he does not consider them as such, unless they are wholly devoted to him.

221. The truly devout shew, that passions as naturally flow from true, as from false love: So deeply sensible are they of the goods and evils of those whom they love for God's sake. But this can only be comprehended by those, who understand the language of love; which to all others, how wise or learned soever, is strange and barbarous.

222. Trust in God, who every moment assist those that give themselves up to him. If we will be always thinking of what is past, and what is to come, we shall be under continual apprehensions.

223. To desire to grow in grace, which is the greatest thing in the whole world, and yet not to strive and labour after it, is desiring to establish an order contrary to that of God, which is immoveable as himself.

224. Can we be troubled, when we know that God does all, and that not an hair falls from our head without his permission.

225. The
284 CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

225. The bottom of our soul may be in repose, even while we are in many outward troubles; just as the bottom of the sea is calm, while the surface is strongly agitated.

226. Christianity is summed up, in being thoroughly willing, that God should treat us in the manner that pleases him. As by becoming Christians, we are become his lambs, we ought to be ready to suffer even to the death, without complaining.

227. We ought never to make a law of the advices we give, but to leave those to whom they are given, to their own choice.

228. God frequently conceals the part which his children have in the conversion of other souls. Yet one may boldly say, that a person who long groans before him for the conversion of another, whenever that soul is converted to God, is one of the chief causes of it; especially if it is a mother, who prays and groans for her child.

229. A constant attention to the work with which God intrusts us, is the greatest mark of solid piety.

230. When God afflicts us, we ought, if possible, to add something to our usual exercises of piety, to harden ourselves against that little relaxation which our present circumstances may require.

231. If after having renounced all, we do not incessantly watch over our actions, and beseech God to accompany our vigilance with his, we shall be again entangled and overcome.

232. The more pure the heart is, the more capable it is of prayer.

233. When we know the pride of our heart,
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

we should offer it to God, as a sickness which he alone can cure.

234. This is humility, to serve God in the state wherein we are, waiting till he shall make it better.

235. We are to bear with those whom we cannot amend, and to be content with offering them to God. There is no greater exercise of charity than this, nor of true resignation. And since God has borne our infirmities in his own person, we may well bear those of each other for his sake.

236. Seeing Christ has given his life for our salvation, it is just that they who love souls for his sake, sometimes hazard their own life for him, to repay some part of his unexampled love.

237. Where there is love, there is humility, long-suffering, patience, and all other virtues meet together; in as much as these are only the branches, whereof love is the root.

238. Christians generally desire to have only sweet medicines for the distemper of their souls, not considering that we use sharp and bitter ones, to cure the diseases of our bodies.

239. Nothing is more to be lamented, than that the wounds of the soul are invisible like herself: And that we are so far from being sensible of them, as soon as we have received them, that for a long time we find pleasure in our misfortune, and fancy we are well, tho' we are sick unto death.

240. We cannot keep the Spirit of God after we have received it, but by increasing it, by constant exercises of piety. Nor can we increase it,
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

it, but by keeping ourselves at a distance from the world.

241. To abandon all, to strip one's self of all, in order to seek and follow Jesus Christ, naked in Bethlehem when he was born, naked in the hall, when he was scourged, and naked when he died on the cross, is so great a mercy, that neither the thing nor the knowledge of it is given to any, but thro' faith in the Son of God.

242. As devils and the souls of men are both of the same, of a spiritual nature, and accordingly the former well understand what passes in the latter, they find it easy to transmit from one soul to another the corruption and infection they meet with there, by means of the evil conversation and friendly intercourse which is between them.

243. There is no faithfulness like that which ought to be between a true guide of souls and the person directed by him. They ought continually to regard each other in God, and closely to examine themselves, whether all their thoughts are pure, and all their words conducted with Christian discretion. Other affairs are only the affairs of men; but these are peculiarly the things of God.

244. The fears which the first appearance of the great truths of God raise in the mind of young converts, resemble those which are occasioned at first by the apparition of good angels. But they soon pass away, and leave the soul in peace and joy in the Holy Ghost.

245. Of all conversation, the most Apostolical is that, which is wrought by the very words of the gospel. By these God hath converted both
the Jews and Heathens, and has formed and does still form his church.

246. The soul, wherein God has shed abroad his grace, no longer knows any language, but that of grace.

247. The words of the gospel are the words of life. All others are only dead words, whatever vigour they may seem to receive, from the eloquence of him that speaks them.

248. Grace renders sweet to the soul, not only the harshest truths, hard sayings, which we could not bear before; but also the most difficult actions, and the most grievous sufferings.

249. Jesus Christ alone opens the ears of the heart; and then we "run in his ways, after the odour of his ointments."

250. Jesus Christ renews his own life every hour, in the bodies and souls of real Christians. They are living images of him, and represent him in a more excellent manner, than the writings of the gospel itself. For the dead characters of the gospel, (tho' living in another sense,) contain only the past life of Christ; whereas true Christians contain also his present life, and that in living characters; which caused the Apostle to declare, "I live not, but Christ liveth in me."

251. Every new victory, which the soul gains, is the effect of a new prayer.

252. It is very possible for a man to love any of the creatures, without their contributing to it. But it is not possible for him to love God, unless God himself waters him from moment to moment.

253. The clouds, which frequently rise in the souls of those, who are truly converted to God, do
not hinder the continuance of that day, which
his presence produces in them. But these clouds
are all scattered by a fresh supply of faith, and
of the Spirit of Jesus Christ.

254. It is not good for a babe in Christ, either
to converse much with the world, or to be
wholly alone.

255. Employment frequently holds the place
of mortification, and produces the same effects.

256. Those, who write by the Spirit of God,
do not follow their memory, so much as their
heart.

257. Our continuance in good works is the
best means to retain a continual sense of the
love of God.

258. We cannot continue in good works,
unless we renounce all desire of the goods, ho-
nours, and pleasures of the world.

259. Let the things of earth roll under our
feet, as those of heaven roll over our heads.

260. God hates sloth, as much as presump-
tion.

261. It is frequently necessary to serve God,
and abandon ourselves to him, tho' we see but
darkly what is his will concerning us, without
waiting for particular revelations. For we can-
not expect in the order of grace, (as in that of
reason,) to have evidence and demonstration at
every step.

262. Truth cannot so well be found by dis-
puting, as by holy meditation.

263. Every one has his peculiar gift from
God, according to which he ought to conduct
himself. At the same time, he should labour
with sobriety to acquire the knowledge of divine
things, so he does it with a single eye, that he
may
may profit thereby, and be more deeply grounded in love.

264. They, that cannot fast one way, may fast another. And those, who are truly devoted to God, have a great liberty to do or not to do these outward things, which are in themselves indifferent.

265. The sympathies formed by grace, far surpass those that are formed by nature.

266. The love of God leads us first to the true love of ourselves, and thence to the love of our neighbour.

267. It is good to renew ourselves from time to time, by closely examining the state of our soul, as if we never had been renewed before. For nothing more tends to the full assurance of faith, than to keep ourselves by this means in humility, and the exercise of all good works.

268. God considers us only according to what we are in our hearts, in the secret movements of our soul, in our hidden intentions, and our passions, imperceptible to others. The goodness of all our works depends on the purity and simplicity of our heart, which is, as it were, the spirit, the invisible soul of this visible body.

269. We should disengage ourselves from all those pleasures, which, if otherwise innocent, yet fill the capacity of the heart, which should be filled by grace only.

270. If we do not devote all we do to God, there is nothing in our best works, but what is human or pagan; because we regard only ourselves therein: And while we do what is good.
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

In appearance, we in effect put ourselves by, a secret self-complacency, in the place of God.

271. In the greatest temptations a single look to Jesus Christ, or the bare pronouncing his name, suffices to overcome the wicked one, so it be done with confidence, and calmness of spirit.

272. There is nothing either in earth or hell, that can possibly hurt a soul, which regards Jesus Christ with a lively faith, either in his death, or in his resurrection.

273. Thanksgiving is, as it were, the soul of prayer, with which it should begin, continue, and end.

274. The hinderances of our thankfulness, when we conquer them, increase instead of diminishing it.

275. God frequently gives a soul, that ardently loves him, a dispensation from those laborious works, which it would do, to testify its gratitude, by laying obstacles in the way, which makes them impossible.

276. In souls filled with love, the desire to please God is a continual prayer.

277. Nothing is more true, than that the yoke of Christ is easy, and his burden light. For one need only love, to fulfil the whole law, even when it cannot be outwardly accomplished. And yet it is true, that this dispensation from outward works, which proceeds from providential hinderances, is often a greater trial to souls full of love, than the most painful of those works would have been.

278. God does not always suffer himself to be overcome by his children, (as he was by Jacob.)
Jacob, in the secret combats of faith and love, wherein they wrestle with him. He often remains victorious over the soul, which desires to labour, to suffer, to die for him: That he may attach her more and more to his love, by hindering the effects of that love, which she bears him. But however the combat is, she is so much the happier, through the increase of her love, by those very oppositions, as torrents are raised by the obstacles which they meet with. And the faith, which guides her love, gives her to understand, that she succeeds in the most excellent manner, by contributing to the success of God's designs, by the disappointment of her own.

279. God only requires of his adult children, that their hearts be thoroughly purified, and that they offer him continually the wishes and vows, that naturally spring from perfect love. For these desires being the first genuine fruits of love, are the most perfect prayers which can spring from it.

280. The necessity of continual watching unto prayer rises hence, that the devil is continually watching to surprise us, and to destroy us by those very victories which we gain over him.

281. As the furious hate which the devil bears us, is termed, the roaring of that lion, so our vehement love may be termed, crying after God.

282. Those who know the greatness and holiness of the church, count nothing therein little.

283. On every occasion of uneasiness, we should retire to prayer, that we may give place to
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

to the grace and light of God, and then form
our resolutions, without being in any pain about
the success they may have.

284. Those who closely follow God, easily
judge of the manner wherein they ought to act
in spiritual things. They need walk but a little
in the strait way, to see before them the light
which disperses the clouds.

285. Nothing of that which is in the order of
God, ought to be accounted troublesome.

286. A soul returned to God, ought to be
attentive to every thing which is said to him
on the head of salvation, with a secret desire
to profit thereby.

287. The whole life of grace, consists in
dependence upon God.

288. There is no surer mark of a true con-
version, than to be greatly tempted of the devil.
The best means of overcoming him is, to have
no dependence upon ourselves, but to throw
ourselves wholly upon God, with an absolute
dependence on his will.

289. The " just shall live by faith." By
his continual regard to God, he draws those
graces and influences from heaven, without
which, the most righteous man upon earth
could not subsist one moment.

290. Ignorance of the truths which exalt
God and abase man, (convinced that in what-
ever state he is, he has continual need of new
grace, which God gives to those only that
humble themselves more and more;) has caused
the ruin of many, who were much admired
in the first stages of their conversion.

291. Jesus Christ, becoming man, out of love
to us, satisfied the justice of his Father, by a
humility,
humility, an obedience, and a patience, as incomprehensible in the human nature, as God in his divine nature was, is, and always will be, to all but himself.

292. We ought to desire the Lord's supper, with the same earnestness, as we desire to preserve the health we enjoy, or to recover that we have lost.

293. He to whom the Lord's supper serves chiefly for food, should prepare himself by another food, the word of God. He to whom it serves chiefly for a medicine, should prepare himself for it by repentance.

294. God imposes one kind of penance on every penitent, by giving him various afflictions: And another kind, in the unavoidable inconveniences, which attend every calling whatever. And none is duly prepared for the Lord's supper, but he that acquits himself well in affliction and in his calling.

295. None is duly prepared for it, who does not daily examine the ground of his conscience, with an earnest desire to judge himself, that he may not be judged of the Lord.

296. They whom God has preserved from gross sins, ought to have tender compassion and great patience towards those whom God has suffered to fall into them, and whom he has left in them for a season. It is thus they are to shew their humility and gratitude to God, and their charity to their neighbour.

297. Of the sins which God has pardoned, let nothing remain, but a deeper humility in our heart, and a stricter regulation in our words, in our actions, and in our sufferings.

298. A
294 CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

298. A natural goodness and easines of temper, often hinder our growing in grace: making us do almost all good works rather from inclination, than by the Spirit of God.

299. Examples are to be followed with caution; but the gospel-rules without reserve. St. Paul advises to follow him, only so far as he followed Christ.

300. It is of no use to love the brightness of truth, unless we shew the warmth of it in our practice.

301. The warmth of love resembles that of the heart, which extends itself to the smallest parts of the body.

302. If the love of God does not increase in us, in the same degree as we increase in knowledge, the stronger principle will overcome the weaker, and knowledge will stifle love. This has occasioned men of the greatest learning almost to envy their happiness, who know little, but love much.

303. The body increases without decreasing, till it comes to a certain age. But there is no limited time wherein the soul may not either increase or decrease.

304. Silence of spirit consists in cutting off all vain and useless thoughts.

305. One may be intemperate in speaking as well as in eating. And as after we have fasted long, we are apt to eat too much, so are we to speak too much, after we have been long silent.

306. It is not reasonable to desire they should love us, who do not love God.

307. We should every day gain something upon ourselves, and be a little more disengaged from the objects that surround us.

308. When
308. When we would counsel our friends, silence is no less blameable than indifference.

309. The holy scripture is the mirror wherein we see God, and wherein we may see the smallest spots upon our souls.

310. Death is the greatest affair of human life. We must prepare for it while we are in rest and health.

311. In whatever way of life we are, we depend on the mercy of God. And it is far better, humbly to trust in him, though with something of uncertainty, than to trust in ourselves, with the utmost assurance. Adam, left to himself, fell. Whereas thousands of his offspring, tho' sinful and feeble, stand thro' the grace of Jesus Christ.

312. If one cannot faithfully serve an earthly prince, without exposing himself to many dangers in his court, and to death in his armies, it is far more reasonable that those, who serve God in the Church, which is the court of his Son, should expose themselves to all the dangers, and suffer all the evils, that occur in his service: Especially, as he, who has established this kingdom, was himself hated of men, and has foretold, that the war, which they, who preached the gospel after him, need make upon the world, would cause them likewise to be hated of all men, for his name's sake.

313. A true guide of souls ought to be as the heart, the tongue, and the hand of God, to labour, by his assistance, for the salvation of them that are under his care. For it is not he that prays, that speaks, that wishes, strives, suffers; but it is the Spirit of God, which does all.
all this, when the minister is united to him, and calls upon him continually.

314. There is this difference in the ministers of the church, and of the world, that the latter assume pomp and grandeur, whereas the power of the former is always covered with charity and humility.

315. There ought nothing to come out of the mouth, or the heart of a preacher of the gospel, but what is not only reasonable, but Christian, and animated by the Holy Spirit.

316. Between the physicians of the soul, and those of the body, there is a great difference in this: The latter are more and more hardened, by the sight of more patients and diseases; whereas the hearts of the former, by the sight of spiritual diseases, grow more and more tender.

317. A man must have courage more than human, to make war on all the world, both within him, and without him.

318. The only way to undertake the preaching the gospel is, to enter upon it by the inspiration of God, without having any regard to the world, or to what is either agreeable or disagreeable in it, and to forget even our own house and relations, just as Abraham did, in order to love God alone, as if he alone were our world, our relations, our all.

319. It is the glory of all true ministers of Christ, to resemble the Angels of God. They nearly resemble them, by having renounced the body, in order to regard the soul only:—by their life all spiritual, uniform throughout, all from God, all for God, and all proceeding from
From the Spirit of God, as is that of the angels in heaven.

320. The government of souls, particularly in that which regards the spiritual life, is not a government of dominion and empire, but of love and tenderness. It consists in following the movements of God in the persons committed to us, after having discerned by his light, that those movements come from him.

321. God is the master of souls: He moves and guides them as he pleases, according to the depth of his judgments. We, who are only his servants and helpers of these souls, depend for more on what he works in them, than they do upon us.

322. He who is honoured with the ministry, ought to be, and to appear as far separate from common christians, as common christians ought to be, and to appear separate from heathens.

323. A preacher should earnestly beg of God, that his being accustomed to sacred offices, may no ways abate the solemn awe, which he at first experienced in them. There is the utmost need, that he should have as much of this to the end, (if not more) as at the beginning.

324. It is often improper to declare our sentiments hastily and abruptly. It may put it out of our power to defend the truth; at least, with any profit.

325. Ministers, above all other men, should have those words continually before their eyes; "The kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force."

326. The disposition, which God indispensably requires of all, that would minister his word, excludes every other design, but that
CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTIONS.

which springs from his grace, and the motion of his Spirit.

327. Christ has always reserved in his Church some ministers, who bear in their souls the character of his divinity, so as to do nothing which is not suitable to his greatness, and far distant from the corruption, which not only overflows the world, but even the Church, and the generality of his ministers.

328. None ought to believe himself worthy of the ministry.

329. A minister ought to avoid contention.

330. Nothing increases grace so much as the ministry, when it is exercised by the Spirit of God.

331. Faith has a peculiar force in an house where several souls consecrated to God are joined together.

332. The life of a minister ought to be uniform to render it exemplary. And if his example does not edify the world, neither will his writings benefit the Church.

333. When we speak to others of the things of God, we ought always to speak to ourselves, so as to take to ourselves, at least, an equal part of the instructions which we give them.

334. Those who have surmounted the desire of the flesh, have still to surmount that of the tongue and of the understanding; particularly at this time, wherein knowledge is so frequently found separate from virtue.

335. When any one writes for God, he should seek for no other eloquence, than that which God gives in the simplicity of his Spirit. He would corrupt this, were he to mix it with human eloquence: And he should never forget, before,
before, in, and after his work, to cry to God, that he may have his heart continually lifted up to him, who ought to be the source of all the thoughts, and all the conversation of every minister.

END of the FOURTH VOLUME.

G. STORY,
North-Green, Worship-Street, London.